Oxidative Stress in Aging
Age-Related Changes of the Human Eye, edited by Carlo A. Cavallotti and Luciano Cerulli, 2008
Classic Papers in Geriatric Medicine, edited by Robert Pignolo, Mary Anne Forciea, and Monica Crane, 2008
Eldercare Technology for Clinical Practitioners, edited by Robin Felder and Majd Alwan, 2008
Oxidative Stress in Aging
From Model Systems to Human Diseases

Edited by

Satomi Miwa, PhD
Institute for Ageing and Health, Newcastle University,
Newcastle upon Tyne, United Kingdom

Kenneth B. Beckman, PhD
Functional Genomics Core,
Children’s Hospital Oakland Research Institute, Oakland, California

Florian L. Muller, PhD
Department of Cellular and Structural Biology,
University of Texas Health Science Center at San Antonio, San Antonio, Texas
Preface

Aging remains one of the biggest unsolved problems in biology. More than 50 years ago, Denham Harman proposed the free radical theory of aging, arguing that cumulative damage from oxygen free radicals was causal to the process of aging. The fundamental idea is simple, yet scientifically plausible. Although at first it received limited attention, a recent explosion of investigative interest and endeavors has made the free radical theory the most extensively tested of all aging theories. The body of literature is now so vast and encompasses so many different techniques and model systems that an integrated evaluation of the evidence is difficult to say the least. Our goal in writing *Oxidative Stress in Aging: From Model Systems to Human Diseases* was to provide an easily accessible assessment of the free radical theory. We believe that the reader will find our “model system by model system” approach helpful, for it greatly simplifies a sometimes contradictory body of evidence.

A further development for the free radical theory is the realization that oxidative stress may contribute not only to aging per se, but also to the pathogenesis of a variety of age-related diseases. No assessment of the free radical theory of aging would be complete without an up-to-date account of major trends on the role of oxygen free radicals in the pathology of age-related diseases.

We thank all the contributors for taking time to produce outstanding chapters that not only summarize key data but also provide critical evaluation, discussion, and interpretation. This book is only possible because of their efforts.

We are also grateful to Dr. Matthew Ford for help with proofreading, and to Springer, particularly Richard Lansing, for exceptionally efficient help and advice throughout, and for accepting our demanding requests, one after another.

Satomi Miwa
Kenneth Bruce Beckman
Florian L. Muller
## Contents

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Chapter</th>
<th>Title</th>
<th>Pages</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Preface</td>
<td>.................................</td>
<td>v</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Contributors</td>
<td>.................................</td>
<td>xi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Section I Introduction</strong></td>
<td>.................................</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter 1</td>
<td>Introduction</td>
<td>.................................</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter 2</td>
<td>The Basics of Oxidative Biochemistry</td>
<td>.................................</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Section II The Role of Oxidative Stress in Aging</strong></td>
<td>.................................</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Part II-A Different Model Systems</strong></td>
<td>.................................</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter 3</td>
<td>Retrograde Response, Oxidative Stress, and Cellular Senescence</td>
<td>.................................</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter 4</td>
<td>Reactive Oxygen Species in Molecular Pathways Controlling Aging in the Filamentous Fungus <em>Podospora anserina</em></td>
<td>.................................</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter 5</td>
<td>Oxidative Stress and Aging in the Budding Yeast <em>Saccharomyces cerevisiae</em></td>
<td>.................................</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter 6</td>
<td>Oxidative Stress and Aging in the Nematode <em>Caenorhabditis elegans</em></td>
<td>.................................</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Chapter 7  Roles of Oxidative Stress in the Aging Process of *Drosophila melanogaster* .......................... 111
Robin J. Mockett, Rajindar S. Sohal, and William C. Orr

Chapter 8  Does Oxidative Stress Limit Mouse Life Span? .............. 129
Florian L. Muller

Part II-B  The Comparative Approach

Chapter 9  Mitochondrial Free Radical Production and Caloric Restriction: Implications in Vertebrate Longevity and Aging ..................... 149
Mónica López-Torres and Gustavo Barja

Section III  Oxidative Stress in Human Aging and Diseases

Chapter 10  Deregulation of Mitochondrial Function: A Potential Common Theme for Cardiovascular Disease Development .......................... 165
Scott W. Ballinger

Chapter 11  Oxidative Stress in Type 2 Diabetes Mellitus .................. 191
Muhammad A. Abdul-Ghani and Ralph A. DeFronzo

Chapter 12  DNA Oxidative Damage and Cancer ........................... 213
Jeffrey A. Stuart and Melissa M. Page

Chapter 13  Oxidative Stress in Hypertension .............................. 229
Sean P. Didion, Sophocles Chrissobolis, and Frank M. Faraci

Chapter 14  Aging and Cardiac Ischemia—Mitochondria and Free Radical Considerations .......................... 253
Paul S. Brookes and David L. Hoffman

Chapter 15  Role of the Antioxidant Network in the Prevention of Age-Related Diseases .......................... 269
Mauro Serafini
Contributors

Muhammad A. Abdul-Ghani, MD, PhD
Division of Diabetes, University of Texas Health Science Center at San Antonio, San Antonio, TX

Scott W. Ballinger, PhD
Division of Molecular and Cellular Pathology, University of Alabama at Birmingham, Birmingham, AL

Gustavo Barja, PhD
Department of Animal Physiology II, Faculty of Biological Sciences, Complutense University, Madrid, Spain

Kenneth B. Beckman, PhD
Functional Genomics Core, Children’s Hospital Oakland Research Institute, Oakland, CA

Paul S. Brookes, PhD
Department of Anesthesiology, University of Rochester Medical Center, Rochester, NY

Sophocles Chrissobolis, PhD
Department of Internal Medicine, Carver College of Medicine, University of Iowa, Iowa City, IA

Ralph A. DeFronzo, MD
Division of Diabetes, University of Texas Health Science Center at San Antonio, San Antonio, TX

Sean P. Didion, PhD
Department of Internal Medicine, Carver College of Medicine, University of Iowa, Iowa City, IA

Ryan Doonan, PhD
Department of Biology, University College London, London, UK
Frank M. Faraci, PhD
Departments of Internal Medicine and Pharmacology, Carver College of Medicine, University of Iowa, Iowa City, IA

Toren Finkel, MD, PhD
Cardiology Branch, National Heart, Lung, and Blood Institute, National Institutes of Health, Bethesda, MD

David Gems, PhD
Department of Biology, University College London, London, UK

Stavros Gonidakis, BA
Integrative and Evolutionary Biology and Andrus Gerontology Center, University of Southern California, Los Angeles, CA

David L. Hoffman, PhD
Department of Biochemistry and Biophysics, University of Rochester Medical Center, Rochester, NY

Valter D. Longo, PhD
Andrus Gerontology Center and Department of Biological Sciences, University of Southern California, Los Angeles, CA

Mónica López-Torres, PhD
Department of Animal Physiology II, Faculty of Biological Sciences, Complutense University, Madrid, Spain

Satomi Miwa, PhD
Institute for Ageing and Health, Newcastle University, Newcastle upon Tyne, UK

Robin J. Mockett, PhD
Department of Biomedical Sciences, College of Allied Health Professions, University of South Alabama, Mobile, AL

Florian L. Muller, PhD
Department of Cellular and Structural Biology, University of Texas Health Science Center at San Antonio, San Antonio, TX

William C. Orr, PhD
Department of Biological Sciences, Southern Methodist University, Dallas, TX

Heinz D. Osiewacz, PhD
Johann Wolfgang Goethe University, Institute of Molecular Biosciences, Frankfurt, Germany

Melissa M. Page, MSc
Department of Biological Sciences, Brock University, St. Catharines, Ontario, Canada

João F. Passos, PhD
Institute for Ageing and Health, Newcastle University, Newcastle upon Tyne, UK
Ilsa I. Rovira, PhD
Cardiology Branch, National Heart, Lung, and Blood Institute,
National Institutes of Health, Bethesda, MD

Christian Q. Scheckhuber, PhD
Johann Wolfgang Goethe University, Institute of Molecular Biosciences,
Frankfurt, Germany

Mauro Serafini, PhD
Antioxidant Research Laboratory at the Unit of Human Nutrition,
National Institute for Food and Nutrition Research, Rome, Italy

Rajindar S. Sohal, PhD
School of Pharmacy, University of Southern California, Los Angeles, CA

Jeffrey A. Stuart, PhD
Department of Biological Sciences, Brock University, St. Catharines, Ontario, Canada

Thomas von Zglinicki, PhD
Institute for Ageing and Health, Newcastle University, Newcastle upon Tyne, UK
Section I
Introduction
1 Introduction

Satomi Miwa, Florian L. Muller, and Kenneth B. Beckman

1 Living in the Presence of Oxygen

The earliest life—simple cells—appeared 4 billion years ago, and rocks 3.5 billion years old contain microfossils of primitive one-celled organisms, the prokaryotes. At that time, the atmosphere contained little oxygen, and all life was anaerobic. About 3 billion years ago, photosynthetic blue-green algae (cyanobacteria) appeared, which slowly and eventually (800 million years later) raised atmospheric oxygen concentration [1, 2]. The rise in oxygen tension in the atmosphere coincides with development of complex eukaryotic life [3–5], and the Cambrian explosion, a profound diversification of animal life approximately 540 million years ago, occurred when oxygen reached concentrations close to those of today (21%) [6, 7]. Indeed, molecular and genetic analyses suggest a correlation, during the past 2.3 billion years, between the development of aerobic metabolism and increased organism complexity [4]. Aerobic metabolism using oxygen (oxidative phosphorylation) in mitochondria is highly efficient in generating energy from organic compounds, and mathematical analysis has shown that the presence of molecular oxygen in metabolic pathways allows far more complex reactions to occur than in those without oxygen [8]. According to one hypothesis, eukaryotes emerged after the engulfment of respiring bacteria (symbionts) by ancient anaerobic bacteria (hosts) – the symbionts being the origin of mitochondria [9]. Thus, the ability to perform oxidative metabolism is seen as a crucial factor in the emergence of complex multicellular life and evolution of animals. Oxidative metabolism remains the major form of energy production in virtually all animals today. Another significance of the appearance of oxygen in the atmosphere was the formation of the ozone layer, which protected the land from lethal levels of UV radiation.

However, despite its many beneficial effects, the emergence of oxygen as a major constituent of the atmosphere has presented all life forms living in its presence with a fundamental problem: how to efficiently protect themselves from its toxicity. In fact, many of the primitive anaerobic organisms are thought to have had died out when atmospheric oxygen levels rose. The only survivors were those species that evolved efficient mechanisms to detoxify oxygen, and those that colonized anaerobic or microaerobic environments [10, 11].
Indeed, it was the study of oxygen toxicity that first led Gerschman and her co-workers to the realization that oxygen free radicals can exist in vivo, and that these free radicals can be highly toxic [12]. The free radical theory of aging ultimately arose from studies of the basic toxicity of oxygen.

1.1 History of Free Radical Theory from Lavoisier to Harman

Oxygen was discovered independently by the Swedish apothecary Karl W. Scheele, in 1772, and by the English amateur chemist Joseph Priestley, in 1774. Oxygen was originally described as a gas that promotes combustion, but Priestley (who called it “dephlogisticated air”) also realized that it was produced by plants (i.e., photosynthesis) and that it was essential for survival of animals (i.e., respiration).

Antoine Lavoisier, a chemist who corresponded with Priestley, repeated Priestley’s experiments, and he further characterized the gas and gave it its current name oxygen, from the Greek root meaning “acid producer,” because it was wrongly thought that acid contained oxygen. Remarkably, Lavoisier is said to have soon realized the harmful effects of oxygen inhalation [13]. Ever since, excessive oxygen has been known to be harmful to a wide range of life forms.

About 100 years after Lavoisier, the toxicity of oxygen was experimentally established by Paul Bert (1878) [14] and J. Lorain Smith (1899) [15] in the course of studies on hyperbaric oxygen. The effects of oxygen on the central nervous system are known as the Bert effect and on the lungs as the Lorain Smith effect or Smith effect, which were named after these pioneers in each subject, respectively.

However, the mechanism of such toxic effects of oxygen remained unknown for another 50 years until Rebecca Gerschman and colleagues postulated that it involved oxygen radicals (1954) [12]. They noted that the effects of oxygen toxicity share many common features with those of ionizing radiation, and found that radiation and oxygen toxicity are synergistic. They further showed that many radioprotectants also were protective against oxygen poisoning and that they were, in fact, well-known antioxidants in lipid chemistry [12]. It was known that radiation involved homolytic bond cleavage and free radical formation, but the idea that such a process could occur in vivo was revolutionary, because free radicals are by their very nature highly reactive and transient. Gershman’s work would have a profound influence on the formulation of the free radical theory of aging.

About 50 years ago, Denham Harman took the ideas developed by Gershman and colleagues one step further and argued, based on divergent strains of evidence, not only that oxygen free radicals (specifically HOO and OH) are formed in vivo, but also that the cumulative damage caused by those free radicals is the ultimate cause of aging (1956) [16]. So was born the free radical theory of aging. The theory was extremely controversial, because many of its cornerstones were regarded as unproven at best: the idea that free radicals could exist in a biological environment had no experimental support. In subsequent years, electron paramagnetic resonance work did show the in vivo existence of carbon-centered free radicals [17], but the real spark of attention to the theory was prompted by the discovery by Joe McCord
and Irwin Fridovich of superoxide dismutase [18]. The fact that nature has developed such highly abundant enzymes to eliminate specifically superoxide free radicals strongly supports the existence of such free radicals in vivo. At about the same time, it was demonstrated that hydrogen peroxide (H$_2$O$_2$) was generated by mitochondria as a by-product of aerobic respiration (i.e., oxidative phosphorylation) [19] which originates from the dismutation of superoxide. It was a clear demonstration of reactive oxygen species (ROS) production in a normal biological process. Oxidative phosphorylation, as noted, is a very efficient, oxygen-dependent way to produce metabolic energy, taking place in mitochondria. Because most oxygen (85–90%) consumed by animals is used by mitochondria, it is now generally thought that mitochondria are the major site of superoxide production during oxidative metabolism in the aerobic cell. Thus, oxygen is a double-edged sword for aerobic life: necessary for energy production, but inevitably “stealing” electrons, thus generating superoxide and other reactive oxygen species.

### 1.2 Development and Derivatives of Free Radical Theory

Over the years, the original free radical theory has been modified and refined. The term free radical theory is somewhat of a misnomer, because many oxidants such as H$_2$O$_2$ are not free radicals. Harman soon offered another insight, that mitochondrial production of ROS (a collective term for superoxide, H$_2$O$_2$, and other highly reactive partially reduced species of oxygen) determines aging [20], which was followed by a proposal of the more specific version of the free radical theory: the mitochondrial theory. Mitochondrial theory posits that mitochondria are not only the major producers of ROS, but also that they are the major targets, due to their proximity to the ROS production sites. Damage to mitochondria and mitochondrial DNA (which exists in the matrix) would result in accumulation of the mitochondria that produce even more ROS, causing a vicious cycle [21].

The more general version of the free radical theory is the oxidative stress (or oxidative damage) theory. The somewhat vague term oxidative stress has become common in recent years, referring to the balance between production of ROS (and their related products) and defense against ROS. Under conditions of oxidative stress, accumulation of oxidative damage would accrue. It is now clear that there are endogenous sources of ROS other than mitochondria. Thus, “oxidative stress theory”—though it may inevitably be loosely defined—is flexible and less restricted than the mitochondria-centered version of the theory.

Another major influence on Harman’s development of the free radical theory was the rate-of-living theory of aging. Ancient philosophers believed that we were born with a limited quantity of “vital substances” and that our life span was determined by how quickly we used it up. Priestley, the first person to observe respiration, wondered “… as a candle burns out much faster in dephlogisticated (i.e., oxygen) than in common air, so we might, as may be said, live out too fast, and the animal powers be too soon exhausted in this pure kind of air.” [22]. The rate-of-living theory was established with empirical evidence in the early 1900s by Max
Rubner [23], and subsequently by Raymond Pearl [24]; it is understood to be the oldest scientific theory of aging. Rubner, whose interest included the correlation between body size, surface area and basal metabolic rate, realized that life span correlates inversely with body size in mammals, and reasoned that this was due to basal metabolic rate [23, 25].

Pearl expanded the theory alongside studies in Drosophila, in which he examined the effects of elevated metabolic rate (culturing at a higher temperature) on life span [24]. The rate-of-living theory states that life span is a function of metabolic rate: the faster that rate, the shorter the life span. Although it is now recognized that this simple relationship between metabolic rate and life span does not always hold true [26–30], the free radical theory has been suggested to offer a molecular mechanism for the rate-of-living theory, because an organism’s metabolic rate is essentially proportional to oxygen consumption.

1.2.1 Aging

In biological terms, aging is defined fundamentally as an age-related increase in susceptibility to diseases and death (see the definitions of Comfort (1960, p 8) [31], Maynard Smith (1962, p 115) [32], Frolkis (1982, p 4) [33] [Box 1.1]). Aging is deleterious, progressive, intrinsic, and universal [34]. Aging is a multifactorial and heterogeneous phenomenon. As such, characteristics of aging have the potential to differ vastly between species, and are nonuniform even between individuals of the same species. Although death is a clear endpoint, aging is much more difficult to describe.

There are many hypotheses to explain mechanisms of aging apart from the oxidative stress theory (Table 1.1) (see [35] for detailed examinations of different theories). Theories can be formulated at different levels of the biological hierarchy, including the molecular, cellular, and systemic levels, and they are not necessary mutually exclusive. There is often cross-talk between theories at different levels: one theory at the molecular level may underlie aspects of another theory at the systemic level, and so on. The oxidative stress theory fits well with other molecular theories. For example, oxidative stress might be involved in the “somatic mutation theory” because oxidative damage causes DNA mutagenesis, or in the “error catastrophe theory” because oxidative damage could compromise ribosome function, or in the “cross-linking/glycosylation theory” because oxidative damage can generate reactive aldehydes.

2 Oxidative Stress in Aging: Format of the Book

The oxidative stress theory remains one of the most popular explanations of aging at the molecular level. The purpose of this book is to give an authoritative account of the current status of the theory, 50 years after it was first proposed.
In Chapter 2 we present the basics of oxidative biochemistry. It is intended to familiarize the reader with the biochemistry of reactive oxygen species and of the antioxidant system, since subsequent chapters will assume some knowledge of this area.

### Box 1.1 Historic definitions of aging

**Comfort A (1960) [31]** Aging is “an increased liability to die, or an increasing loss of vigour, with increasing chronological age, or with the passage of life cycle.”

**Maynard Smith J (1962) [32]** Aging processes are “those which render individuals more susceptible as they grow older to the various factors, intrinsic or extrinsic, which may cause death.”

**Frolkis VV (1982) [33]** “Aging is a naturally developing biological process which limits the adaptive possibilities of an organism, increases the likelihood of death, reduces the life span and promotes age pathology.”

### Table 1.1 Some theories of aging

#### Molecular and cellular level
- Wear and tear: Wearing out of cells and tissues by accumulation of normal insults from daily living.
- Waste accumulation: Accumulation of waste products in the cell which perturb normal cellular function.
- Error catastrophe: Errors in transcriptional and translational processes.
- Somatic mutation and DNA damage: Somatic mutations and damages to DNA alter genetic information.
- Telomeres and Hayflick limit: Possible number of cell division is limited (determined by the length of telomere) and cells become senesced.
- Cross-linking/glycosylation: Cross-linking of proteins with glucose alter their functions.
- Dysdifferentiation: Impaired regulations of gene activation and repression mechanisms.
- Free radical/oxidative stress: Accumulation of damage caused by free radicals that are produced as metabolic by-products.

#### Systemic level
- Metabolic (rate of living): Life span inversely correlates with metabolic rate.
- Neuroendocrine: Failure in neuroendocrine control of physiological homeostasis.
- Immune function: Decline in immune function that results in decreases in resistance to infectious diseases and increases in incidence of autoimmunity.

### Section I. Introduction

In Chapter 2 we present the basics of oxidative biochemistry. It is intended to familiarize the reader with the biochemistry of reactive oxygen species and of the antioxidant system, since subsequent chapters will assume some knowledge of this area.
Section II. Role of Oxidative Stress in Aging

The fundamental idea of the oxidative theory is straightforward and simple. It has been tested in a wide range of “aging” model systems and in comparative studies. It is probably the most extensively tested theory on aging and has been the subject of a formidable body of literature.

Part II-A Different Model Systems

As with many areas of biology, the use of model systems has proved invaluable to the oxidative stress theory of aging. Because of their short life span, model organisms make testing of specific interventions both logistically and temporally feasible. The ease of genetic manipulation of specific model organisms (e.g., mice, Drosophila species) has further increased their utility. The free radical theory of aging has received extensive experimental testing in model organisms, with sometimes contradictory results.

We have grouped the results by model organism, with each chapter (Chapters 3–8) being written by an expert evaluating the evidence for the free radical theory in a specific model system. This approach greatly simplifies evaluation of the evidence, considering the contradictory nature of the literature. Furthermore an investigator typically focuses his or her career on one model organism; our format enables evaluation of the evidence based on years of practical experience, great depth of knowledge of the literature, and critical unpublished observations. Naturally, the experimental results obtained in model systems can be complementary, but extrapolation and generalization of results between species must take phylogeny and physiological differences into account.

Part II-B Comparative Approach

The free radical theory has been extensively evaluated by comparative physiology and biochemistry. The comparative method examines whether there are particular physiological or biochemical traits that correlate with life span across different species. Chapter 9 reviews the comparative biochemistry of oxidative damage, mitochondrial ROS production, and higher vertebrate animal life span.

Section III. Oxidative Stress in Human Aging and Diseases

A critical outgrowth of the free radical theory of aging is the free radical theory of disease, i.e., the realization that ROS may not only contribute to aging per se, but also to the pathogenesis of a variety of age-related and non-age-related diseases.
Human aging is characterized by increased susceptibility to age-related diseases. One important trend is the emergent role of oxidative stress in specific age-related (as well as non-age-related) diseases, rather than aging in general. Moreover, much more evidence is available on the pathogenic role of ROS in specific diseases than in aging generally. Thus, we devote an entire section to the role of oxidative stress in specific diseases. In addition, Section III includes a chapter (Chapter 15) of epidemiological reviews on effects of antioxidant supplementation on prevention of diseases; the evidence from the clinical trials is weak, and the possible reasons are discussed.

Section IV. Future

A relatively recent development in the long history of the free radical theory is the finding that ROS can act as signalling molecules, and not just as deleterious metabolic by-products. Although ROS have long been known to be purposefully produced by the immune system to kill invading pathogens, it is now recognized that an entire family of enzymes, called Nox, purposefully generate ROS at cell membranes, likely for cell signaling. Chapter 16 gives an overview of the current knowledge on ROS as signaling molecules.

We end the book with our evaluation of the current status of the free radical theory and where we believe it is headed in the future.

References

2 The Basics of Oxidative Biochemistry

Satomi Miwa, Florian L. Muller, and Kenneth B. Beckman

1 Chemistry of Reactive Oxygen Species

Although a thorough knowledge of oxygen chemistry is necessary to understand the biochemistry of reactive oxygen species, that topic is beyond the scope of this book (see excellent works by Sawyer [1, 2] and the outstanding textbook of Halliwell and Gutteridge [3], Chapter 1). A large number of different reactive oxygen species (ROS) and reactive nitrogen species are now known to exist in biological systems, the most relevant to the present book being superoxide (O$_2^-$ / HO$_2^*$), hydrogen peroxide (H$_2$O$_2$), hydroxyl radical (OH$^*$), organic (lipid, alkyl, or short chain) hydroperoxides and hydroperoxide radicals (ROOH, ROO$^*$), peroxynitrite and peroxynitrous acid (ONOO$^-$ / ONOOH), carbonate radical (CO$_3^-$), and reactive aldehydes of varying lengths. Various oxo-metal complexes, (such as those formed from heme and H$_2$O$_2$), may also be relevant. We limit our discussion to the chemical properties relevant to the biological toxicity of the best known reactive species: superoxide, hydrogen peroxide, and the hydroxyl radical. Although we focus on these three species, this is not to say that the many other known ROS (and the downstream products thereof) are not relevant to oxidative stress and aging.

1.1 Superoxide

A one-electron reduction of O$_2$ yields superoxide (HO$_2^*$ / O$_2^-$; pK$_a$ = 4.88), with a redox potential O$_2$ / O$_2^-$ of ~160 mV at pH 7.0 under physiological conditions [1, 2, 4, 5]. Thus, a low-potential, single electron carrier is the ideal catalyst of superoxide formation (in biological systems, iron-sulfur clusters, semiquinones, and cytochromes are low-potential, single electron carriers [6, 7]). Superoxide spontaneously dismutates to H$_2$O$_2$, with a pH-dependent second order rate of ~10$^5$ M$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$ (at pH 7.0 [4]). After the discovery of superoxide dismutase, many questioned whether superoxide dismutase (SOD) could be physiologically relevant, because superoxide is not particularly reactive [8], and it decays spontaneously at such a
fast rate: this misconception (ultimately proven wrong by the drastic phenotypes brought about by SOD knockouts, in diverse organisms [9–17]) arises from the fact that superoxide dismutation by SOD is first order with regard to superoxide concentration, whereas spontaneous dismutation is second order. Indeed, it is now known that superoxide is extremely toxic (much more so than \( \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \)) and that intracellular concentrations in the picomolar range are lethal. The pH-dependent equilibrium constant for superoxide dismutation to \( \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \) is \( K \approx 10^{18} \) at pH 7.0, so the reaction can be considered irreversible except in circumstances of very high levels of SOD and very low levels of superoxide [18]. Apart from dismutation, superoxide can act both as a reductant (e.g., superoxide reduces high-potential ferricytochromes to their ferrous states, with rate constants of \( 10^5 \) to \( 10^6 \, \text{M}^{-1} \text{s}^{-1} \) [4]) and as an oxidant (especially in its protonated \( \text{HO}_2^+ \) form [4, 5]) via the oxidation of low-potential iron sulfur clusters, thereby liberating redox-active iron. The liberation of \( \text{Fe}^{2+} \) from iron-sulfur clusters is believed by some investigators to be the main pathway of biological superoxide toxicity [19, 20]: the availability of redox active iron is thought to be the rate limiting step in \( \text{OH}^- \) formation (see Subsection 1.3) by Fenton chemistry. Superoxide, as \( \text{HO}_2^- \) [21–23], can also initiate lipid peroxidation. Other oxidations of potential biological relevance include the reaction with catechols (\( \sim 10^4 \, \text{M}^{-1} \text{s}^{-1} \)) and thiols (from 10 to \( 10^4 \, \text{M}^{-1} \text{s}^{-1} \)), the latter of which can proceed in a peroxidation-like chain reaction, consuming several thiols per superoxide molecule [24]. A third fate of superoxide is of interest: being a free radical, superoxide can react with other free radicals in annihilation reactions, which can proceed at diffusion limited (very fast) rates, because there is no activation energy barrier [25]. The best example of this type of reaction is that of superoxide with \( \text{NO}^\cdot \), forming peroxynitrite/peroxynitrous acid [26]. Although beyond the scope of this review, peroxynitrite can undergo subsequent chemical rearrangements, yielding very strong oxidants (\( \text{NO}_2^+, \text{OH}^+, \text{CO}_3^- \) [27]). The production of these strong oxidants, coupled with the great speed of peroxynitrite formation, has led some to argue that peroxynitrite formation is the main pathway of biological superoxide toxicity; however, this view remains controversial [28, 29]. Peroxynitrite formation is by no means the only biologically relevant radical annihilation reaction. It is now recognized that many enzymes use stable carbon-centered or delocalized free radicals as part of their normal catalytic mechanism [30]. Superoxide could theoretically react very rapidly with such radicals, causing irreversible enzymatic inactivation. One well-documented instance of such a case is the reaction of superoxide with the tyrosyl radical of ribonucleotide reductase, an enzyme absolutely essential for DNA synthesis, leading to tyrosine peroxide formation and irreversible inactivation of this enzyme [31]. There are still other pathways of superoxide toxicity. Superoxide can initiate the oxidation of short chain sugars [32, 33], forming toxic \( \alpha, \beta \)-dicarbonyls. Superoxide also can oxidize low-potential heme proteins, such as hemoglobin and myoglobin, yielding the oxygen-carrying incompetent met-forms [34]. Tyrosine peroxide formation may be another pathway of superoxide toxicity [25], and we speculate that there are others yet to be discovered.
1.2 Hydrogen Peroxide

Dismutation and oxidation reactions of superoxide yield hydrogen peroxide. Hydrogen peroxide, although more oxidizing than superoxide, is biologically less toxic: picomolar intracellular levels of superoxide are lethal, whereas micromolar levels of \( \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \) can be tolerated. \( \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \) is a potent oxidizer (although not always a fast oxidizer), and is much more diffusible than superoxide, because it is less reactive and is membrane permeable: \( \text{O}_2^- \) is generally considered membrane impermeable [35, 36], except in its \( \text{HO}_2^- \) form, which is in low abundance at physiological pH. \( \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \) is usually a slow two-electron oxidizer [24], and is rather stable. However, in the presence of a metal catalyst or heme, it can act as a very rapid and indiscriminate oxidant; some biological molecules are direct oxidation targets of \( \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \), specifically those with low-potential cysteines. \( \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \)-induced thiol oxidation may be damaging as in the case of the glycolytic enzyme glyceraldehyde-3-phosphate dehydrogenase (GAPDH) [37–39], but it also may be relevant in the redox regulation of certain enzymes, a well-documented case being the PTP1B phosphatase [40, 41].

1.3 Hydroxyl Radical

The full oxidizing strength of \( \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \) can be harnessed if it is single-electron reduced to \( \text{OH}^+ \), which is one of the most potent oxidizing agents known to chemistry, with redox potential +2.40 V [3]. This full strength can be achieved by Haber-Weiss chemistry, i.e., superoxide can react with \( \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \), but the rate constants for this reaction are considered too low for biological significance [42]. Alternatively, \( \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \) can react with reduced metal ions (most notably, \( \text{Cu}^+ \) and \( \text{Fe}^{2+} \) [43, 44]) to generate \( \text{OH}^+ \) in a reaction termed Fenton chemistry [20, 42, 44, 45]. \( \text{OH}^+ \) reacts at diffusion-limited rates with almost everything found in the cell (p 58 in [3]): as such, its toxicity is nonselective and its diffusion distance is very short. Because \( \text{OH}^+ \) reacts rapidly and indiscriminately, there is little that antioxidants can do, unless present in prohibitively high amounts. Thus, unlike the cases of \( \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \) and \( \text{O}_2^- \), there is no enzyme that specifically detoxifies \( \text{HO}^- \), and it seems that biological systems tightly regulate the availability of Fenton chemistry-capable metal ions to minimize \( \text{OH}^+ \) formation.

2 Antioxidant System

The eukaryotic antioxidant system has grown from the three classical enzymes—SOD, catalase, and glutathione peroxidase—to include a diverse and still expanding, enzymatic and nonenzymatic group of players. Furthermore, there are several enzymes that mitigate the effect of ROS by repairing oxidative damage, especially
with regard to DNA oxidative damage (see Chapter 12). Although it is beyond the scope of this review to detail each of these enzymes, we provided a brief introduction to the $\text{O}_2^{-}$ and $\text{H}_2\text{O}_2$ detoxifying branches of the antioxidant network, because these enzymes are discussed extensively throughout this book, and most chapters assume some familiarity with them. At the same time, we alert readers that the understanding of the antioxidant network is still incomplete, with new members still being discovered.

2.1 SOD Accelerates Dismutation of Superoxide Radical

The enzyme SOD has special significance for the free radical theory of aging. Its discovery strongly suggested that superoxide (and by extension, oxygen free radicals) was produced in vivo. SOD is among the best known antioxidant enzymes, and knockout studies in *Escherichia coli*, yeast, flies, and mice all testify to its importance (for review, see [46, 47]). The discovery by Fridovich and McCord that erythrocuprein catalyzes the dismutation of the superoxide anion led to an explosion of interest in oxygen free radicals from medical professionals and chemists alike. Indeed, SOD may be one of the most well-studied enzymes. In mammalian systems, there are three different SOD isozymes encoded by three different genes [9, 48–51]. *Sod1* encodes copper-zinc SOD, which is found both in the cytoplasm and in the mitochondrial intermembrane space [52, 53]. *Sod2* encodes manganese superoxide dismutase, which is exclusively located in the mitochondrial matrix [50, 54]. *Sod3* is a copper-zinc SOD that is secreted and is extracellular in localization [49].

The general mechanism of superoxide dismutases can be summarized as follows, where M stands for metal (Cu$^{2+}$ or Mn$^{3+}$), the superscripted minus sign (−) stands for negative electric charge, and the dot represents an unpaired electron. The rate constants do not vary in the pH range from 5.5 to 9.0.

\[
\text{O}_2^{-} + \text{SOD-M} \rightarrow \text{O}_2 + \text{SOD-M}^- (k = 10^9 \text{ M}^{-1} \text{ s}^{-1}) \\
\text{O}_2^{-} + 2\text{H}^+ + \text{SOD-M}^- \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 + \text{SOD-M} (k = 10^9 \text{ M}^{-1} \text{ s}^{-1})
\]

The spontaneous decomposition of superoxide is pH dependent, and it can be written as follows (net reaction):

\[
\text{O}_2^{-} + \text{O}_2^{-} + 2\text{H}^+ \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 + \text{O}_2 (k = 10^5 \text{ M}^{-1} \text{ s}^{-1} \text{ at pH 7.0})
\]

Thus, SOD accelerates the destruction of superoxide by increasing the rate constant for spontaneous dismutation by >1,000-fold, and also by making the rate of superoxide decay a first order rather than second order process with respect to superoxide concentration. This means that SOD is more efficient at accelerating the decomposition of superoxide, compared with spontaneous dismutation, at low superoxide concentration. However, because an enzyme cannot change the position of equilibrium, but only the rate at which it is achieved,
there is a lower limit of superoxide concentration below which the enzyme cannot reduce it.

In addition to catalyzing the (reversible) dismutation of $\mathbf{O}_2^−$, SOD also can undergo a variety of radical-producing side reactions [55–58], most notably generating highly oxidizing OH\(^-\) and $\mathbf{CO}_3^+$ in an $\mathbf{H}_2\mathbf{O}_2$-dependent manner termed peroxidase reaction (best documented in CuZn-SOD [58]). In addition, it also can decompose peroxynitrite to the highly reactive $\mathbf{NO}_2^-$ radical [56]. SOD can catalyze the $\mathbf{CO}_3$ and $\mathbf{H}_2\mathbf{O}_2$-dependent oxidation of a variety of molecules, including the dye 5-(and-6)-carboxy-2,7-dichlorodihydrofluorescein [55]. Finally, CuZn-SOD can catalyze the oxygen-dependent oxidation of thiols, in cysteine and glutathione [57]. These deleterious pro-oxidative side reactions may or may not be relevant in a non-pathological state, but they cannot be ignored when SOD is overexpressed at high levels in transgenic mice or flies.

2.2 Peroxiredoxins are Major Scavengers of Endogenously Produced $\mathbf{H}_2\mathbf{O}_2$

Although the superoxide-detoxifying system is compact with only three SOD enzymes, and the relative contribution of each enzyme is more or less understood, this is not the case for the cellular $\mathbf{H}_2\mathbf{O}_2$ detoxification system. There are multiple enzymes involved, including glutathione peroxidases, catalase, and peroxiredoxins. Catalase acts as a $\mathbf{H}_2\mathbf{O}_2$ “dismutase,” turning two $\mathbf{H}_2\mathbf{O}_2$ molecules into $\mathbf{O}_2$ and $\mathbf{H}_2\mathbf{O}$. Peroxidases perform two-electron reduction of $\mathbf{H}_2\mathbf{O}_2$, with its reducing equivalents ultimately originating from NAPDH.

It is traditionally held that glutathione peroxidase and catalase are the main scavengers of cellular $\mathbf{H}_2\mathbf{O}_2$. Based on genetic studies in yeast and mice, this view is no longer tenable. In the absence of catalase, oxidative stress and deleterious phenotypic consequences are minimal in yeast, mice, or even humans (patients with acatalasemia have no major pathology [13, 59, 60]). Nonetheless, lack of catalase does render cells susceptible to, and is the major kinetic sink for, exogenously added $\mathbf{H}_2\mathbf{O}_2$ [59, 60]. Although glutathione peroxidase 1 (Gpx1) is an abundant enzyme, and it also reacts rapidly with $\mathbf{H}_2\mathbf{O}_2$, genetic ablation does not result in oxidative stress or deleterious phenotypes in either yeast or mice [61–63]; it is worth mentioning that Gpx1 is missing in Drosophila and even in certain mammals, such as the naked mole rat [64]. Gpx1-lacking mice are highly sensitive to bolus exogenous ROS generators such as paraquat and diquat [61–63], although they exhibit little or no elevation in basal levels of oxidative damage, and do not show any compensatory antioxidant up-regulations (Han, Muller, Perez, Van Remmen, Richardson, unpublished data). No deleterious phenotypes are evident in yeast lacking Gpx1 or catalase, even in environmental situations where excess ROS production is expected to occur, such as hyperoxia or the postdiauxic phase of yeast growth [13, 65]. It does not seem to be a question of redundancy either, because yeast strains lacking all three Gpx homologs are viable and they do not show any obvious phenotypic defects [66]. The reason why knocking out Cat or
Gpx1 does not affect phenotype or increase endogenous oxidative stress is, in our assessment, because endogenously produced $\text{H}_2\text{O}_2$ is detoxified by another enzyme system: the peroxiredoxins.

Peroxiredoxin was first discovered in yeast (a.k.a. thiol-specific antioxidant, \textit{tsa1} [67, 68]), and homologs are found in all kingdoms of life [68, 69]. In contrast to the lack of phenotype resulting from glutathione peroxidase or catalase yeast knockouts, knocking out \textit{tsa1} has deleterious consequences: increased oxidative damage, thermosensitivity, decreased growth under aerobic conditions, and reduced viability during the stationary phase; most intriguingly however, the rate of mutagenesis and genomic instability is dramatically (10- to 20-fold) increased [67, 70–74]. In contrast to the lack of phenotype in mice lacking catalase or Gpx1, knocking out peroxiredoxin 1 in mice causes increased oxidative damage, increased cancer incidence and shortened life span [75]. Knockout of peroxiredoxin 1 or 2 results in hemolytic anemia [75, 76].

Although Gpx1, catalase, and peroxiredoxins all react with $\text{H}_2\text{O}_2$, the chemical basis of their relative importance is still not fully understood. Catalase is the most economical way of removing $\text{H}_2\text{O}_2$, because no reducing equivalents are consumed. As such, it is very efficient at removing large quantities of $\text{H}_2\text{O}_2$, but at low concentrations of $\text{H}_2\text{O}_2$, it exhibits a nonspecific peroxidase activity, i.e., it can catalyze the $\text{H}_2\text{O}_2$-dependent oxidation of a variety of molecules [6]. Gpx1 consumes a two-electron reducing equivalent- for every $\text{H}_2\text{O}_2$ it reduces to water. What is unique about peroxiredoxins is that they are inactivated by high levels of $\text{H}_2\text{O}_2$, because their active site thiol is oxidized (“overoxidized”) to sulfenic acid [37, 68, 77]. As such, peroxiredoxins are ineffective at removing high levels of $\text{H}_2\text{O}_2$. Conversely, they seem to be the preferred target of low levels of $\text{H}_2\text{O}_2$, likely because of their high abundance, low redox potential, and rapid rate constant of reaction with $\text{H}_2\text{O}_2$ [37, 68, 77, 78].

To summarize this section, genetic evidence and recent biochemical work indicate that glutathione peroxidase, catalase, and peroxiredoxins play nonoverlapping roles in scavenging $\text{H}_2\text{O}_2$. High $\text{H}_2\text{O}_2$ levels are handled by glutathione peroxidase and catalase, whereas the lower levels of $\text{H}_2\text{O}_2$ produced by normal endogenous metabolism are scavenged by peroxiredoxins. This makes peroxiredoxins of great interest to the free radical theory of aging.

### 2.3 How Many Unknown Antioxidant Genes are out There?

Keep in mind that although the major players have probably been identified, new members of the antioxidant network are still being discovered. This is especially important when considering the effect of antioxidant knockout and overexpression on life span. Below, we highlight three relatively new antioxidant systems that we believe to be of great physiological significance, and that will receive increased attention in the near future.
2.3.1 Biliverdin/Bilirubin and Biliverdin Reductase

Biliverdin is a degradation product of heme that is reduced by biliverdin reductase to bilirubin. Ames’s group reported that bilirubin could act as a peroxidation chain-breaking antioxidant in a defined chemical system [79, 80]. Snyder’s group reported that biliverdin/bilirubin and biliverdin reductase form a network that catalytically detoxifies \( \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \) [81], ablation of which results in apoptotic cell death. Although more work needs to be done (e.g., what are the phenotypical consequences of biliverdin reductase knockout?), it is probable that bilirubin will turn out to be a key player in the antioxidant network.

2.3.2 Apolipoprotein D (ApoD)

During an overexpression screen of genes for resistance to hyperoxia (100% O\(_2\)) in \textit{Drosophila} species, Walker et al. [82] identified Glial Lazarillo, homolog of ApoD. Overexpression of ApoD thus conferred extended life span under hyperoxia. In further support of this finding, an independent group of investigators has reported that knocking out ApoD leads to a 20% reduction in median life span and increased oxidative damage [83]. ApoD belongs to the lipocalin family, which bind and transport small hydrophobic molecules [84]; although the exact biological function of ApoD is unknown, it evidently plays an important role in protection from oxidative stress, by yet unknown mechanisms.

2.3.3 Sulfiredoxin and Sestrin

Lower oxidation states of cysteine (disulfides) are readily reversible, while higher oxidation states, such as sulfinic acid, were once considered irreversible, biologically speaking. This view changed with the discovery of sulfiredoxin, an enzyme that can reduce sulfinic acid back to thiol, in an ATP-dependent manner [85]. Additional work suggests that it plays a role in resolving mixed disulfides bonds [86]. Initially discovered in yeast, sulfiredoxin is conserved in all eukaryotes, including mammals. In a perfect example of how multiple gene names can confuse the field, sulfiredoxin (\textit{Srxn1}) was already known as a gene of unknown function, cloned by differential display of an in vitro model of tumorigenesis, and termed \textit{neoplastic progression 3} (\textit{Npn3}), although nothing about its actual function was reported [87]. As a result, in most mouse microarray studies, sulfiredoxin is termed neoplastic progression 3, and typically classified as “cancer related” or “other” rather than as “antioxidant” [88, 89].

\textit{Npn3}/\textit{Srxn1} is up-regulated by an exceptionally large fold-magnitude in microarray studies of oxidative stress. \textit{Npn3}/\textit{Srxn1} is induced up to 32-fold by D3T (liver [88]), 12-fold by CdCl\(_2\) (liver [89]), 4- to 10-fold by paracetamol (liver [90],...
supplemental materials), and 3.3-fold by paraquat (heart [91], supplemental materials). A survey of the Gene Expression Omnibus database also indicates that a large induction of Npn3/Srxn1 is observed in injury to the lung by hyperoxia (data set GDS247, ID 102780_at) or phosgene (GDS1244, 1451680_at). Our own microarray data indicate Npn3/Srxn1 is also strongly up-regulated in the liver of CuZn-SOD knockout mice (Han, Muller, Perez, Van Remmen, Richardson, unpublished data). That Npn3 and Sxrn1 are synonyms for the same gene has not been pointed out in any of the 15 papers written on Srxn1 since its discovery. Furthermore, this example highlights the problems associated with multiple names of genes and the need for uniform gene nomenclature in the postgenomic age.

Because it was discovered so recently, the function of sulfiredoxin is not yet fully known, and because no knockout of sulfiredoxin in mice is yet available, its true physiological importance remains to be established.

A similar catalytic activity to sulfiredoxin (reducing sulfinic acid back to sulfhydryl) was recently ascribed for the p53 target gene P26/sestrin1 and sestrin 2 [92]. This finding is intriguing, considering the increasing attention p53 is receiving as a modulator of ROS in vivo [93]. Although no knockout of sestrin 1 or 2 is yet available, knocking out p53 in mice results in increased oxidative damage, shortened life span, and cancer, which can be significantly attenuated by feeding of the antioxidant N-acetyl cysteine [93].

2.4 ROS Sources

Although it is now recognized that reactive oxygen species can be formed under many different conditions and in many different cellular compartments, the number of enzymes that have been documented to generate $\text{O}_2^-$ (either deleteriously or purposefully) is relatively small. Superoxide can be produced by NADPH oxidases [94] (first thought to be unique to phagocytes but now known to be located on the plasma membrane of most cell types [95]), xanthine oxidase [96], aldehyde oxidase [97], cytochromes P450 [98], and the mitochondrial electron transport chain [99, 100]. Many more enzyme systems (most oxygenases, e.g., monoamine oxidase) are known to generate $\text{H}_2\text{O}_2$. A particularly active source of $\text{H}_2\text{O}_2$ includes enzymes involved in the oxidation of fatty acids in the peroxisomes [6].

Despite the variety of ROS sources, most interest from a gerontological perspective has centered on the mitochondrial electron transport chain. Although it was recognized early on, through in vitro biochemical work, that the mitochondrial electron transport chain is an exceptionally strong source of superoxide, definitive proof (and its underlying biological importance) came from the finding that mice lacking mitochondrial matrix Mn-SOD (Sod2) die several days after birth [9, 10]. Mice knockouts for cytoplasmic (and intermembrane space) CuZn-SOD (Sod1) and extracellular CuZn-SOD (Sod3), although certainly not normal [51,101–108], do not exhibit as dramatic a phenotype as Sod2$^{+/-}$ mice, thus indicating that the mitochondrial matrix is indeed the most important site of superoxide toxicity. This
also seems to be true in *Drosophila melanogaster*; although the *Sod1* phenotype is more severe in flies than in mice, only *Sod2* results in true postnatal lethality [16, 109, 110]. Removing xanthine oxidase worsens, rather than ameliorates, the phenotype of *Sod1* knockout flies [111]. Thus, for the present review, the mitochondrial electron transport chain remains the focus for oxidative stress and aging; however, no one would seriously argue that other nonmitochondrial sites of superoxide generation are not relevant to aging (e.g., the plasma membrane oxidoreductase [112]).

The mitochondrial electron transport chain is a series of one-electron shuttles of progressively stronger oxidants, which couple the energy released during oxidation to the pumping of protons across the inner mitochondrial membrane, and to the eventual generation of ATP [113]. There are several low-potential carriers in this system, which can potentially donate electrons to superoxide (for review, see [7]). Mitochondrial superoxide generation was first discovered as H$_2$O$_2$ released from mitochondria treated with the respiratory inhibitors antimycin A or rotenone [114, 115]. Not until Loschen et al. discovered that superoxide radicals are generated by submitochondrial particles, under the same conditions as H$_2$O$_2$ formation, was it realized that mitochondrial H$_2$O$_2$ originates as a dismutation product of superoxide [99]. For convenience, mitochondrial superoxide production is still largely assayed indirectly by measuring H$_2$O$_2$ [115, 116]. Most investigators now believe that complex I and complex III are the main sources of superoxide [7, 113] in mammalian mitochondria; it is also known that mutations can turn complex II into a superoxide generator [117, 118]. It has also been suggested that α-ketoglutarate dehydrogenase generates superoxide and H$_2$O$_2$ [119, 120]. Whereas it may very well produce H$_2$O$_2$, inhibition of the respiratory chain with KCN, which would be predicted (based on dependence on high NADH-to-NAD$^+$ ratio) to increase superoxide production dramatically, actually rescues rather than kills a Mn-SOD lacking yeast ([12] and see Chapter 5). In mitochondria from *D. melanogaster*, glycerol 3-phosphate dehydrogenase is a very potent source of superoxide [121]. Complex I releases superoxide exclusively toward the mitochondrial matrix, whereas complex III and glycerol 3-phosphate dehydrogenase release superoxide toward both the matrix and the cytoplasm [121–123]. Considerable debate surrounds the importance of these sites, in terms of how much superoxide mitochondria truly produce in vivo. In vitro, a very large rate of superoxide production is observed when mitochondria respire on succinate and undergo reverse-electron transfer through complex I [124–126]. The often-quoted figure that “1-2% of electrons going through the respiratory chain are diverted to superoxide” comes from these studies. Although it is taken as self-evident by some investigators [127], whether or not reverse-electron transfer occurs in vivo has not yet been established. Under normal forward-electron transfer, by using the rate of H$_2$O$_2$ release as an indicator of superoxide production, that number is closer to 0.1% of electrons [47, 124]. Because oxygen tension is correlated with the rate of superoxide production [127, 128], even the 0.1% figure may be an overestimate, because oxygen tension in vivo is ~3% compared with 21% used in the above experiments. Some investigators have thus claimed that no H$_2$O$_2$ is released (and by extension, no superoxide is produced) from “normal” mitochondria in the absence of respiratory inhibitors [129, 130].
This statement is difficult to take seriously, considering that mice and flies lacking mitochondrial Sod2 die shortly after birth [9, 16] amid massive oxidative stress. Thus, although the rate of mitochondrial superoxide production is likely low in vivo (perhaps as low as 1 electron in 40,000 diverted toward superoxide formation), this is still high enough to be incompatible with life, in the absence of SOD.

One of the best ways to test the free radical theory of aging would be to modify the rate of mitochondrial superoxide production [7, 131]. However, the molecular details of this process are poorly understood. Studies with respiratory inhibitors (e.g., antimycin A, rotenone) have shown that almost anything that interrupts the “smooth” electron transfer through the respiratory chain results in a dramatic stimulation of ROS production (for review, see [7, 124, 128, 132, 133]). One can speculate that the availability of both a reduced reactive intermediate (e.g., semiquinone, iron-sulfur cluster) and O2− and the ability of the latter to reach the former, should determine the rate of O2− production. Oxygen tension, as mentioned, has already been demonstrated experimentally to modulate superoxide production [14, 127, 128, 134], and the absence of oxygen (anaerobiosis or anoxia) is the only condition known to prevent superoxide formation. Not surprisingly, heat, which denatures proteins and exposes reactive intermediates to O2 also dramatically stimulates superoxide formation [135] (in model organisms, anaerobiosis dramatically increases theromotolerance [136, 137]). Thus, heat shock proteins may minimize superoxide production by maintaining the electron transfer complexes in the properly folded state. Finally, it is known that the higher the mitochondrial membrane potential (ΔΨ), the higher the rate of superoxide production [6, 128, 132, 138]. Superoxide production by succinate-driven reverse-electron transfer is essentially eliminated by a drop of >10 mV in ΔΨ [124, 139], which is so small that it is essentially undetectable using routine ΔΨ probes such as safranin O [139]. Even forward-electron transfer with glutamate/malate is inhibited by uncouplers (carbonyl cyanide p-trifluoromethoxyphenylhydrazone), but the drop in membrane potential required is substantially greater [140]. The dependence of superoxide production on ΔΨ is generally explained by a higher ΔΨ causing accumulation of electrons on reactive intermediates (such as semiquinones, flavosemiquinones, and low-potential iron-sulfur clusters), which are required for proton pumping [132]. Thus, “mild” uncoupling has been proposed as a method to reduce superoxide production therapeutically [132]. It seems that nature has espoused this strategy and that it has devised special proteins, dubbed uncoupling proteins, to maintain the membrane potential at safe low levels [141].

2.5 Measuring Oxidative Damage

Because ROS have short half-lives, and they are found at low concentrations in vivo, they are exceedingly difficult to observe. The alternative that biochemists have gravitated toward is measuring the end products of ROS, i.e., oxidative damage. Measuring oxidative damage is almost as old as the free radical theory itself.
It has a history of controversy, and many techniques used at one point in time have subsequently proved inappropriate, usually due to artifactual oxidation of the sample during preparation (see discussion on pp 388 and 407 in [3]). In this section, we briefly discuss the main current techniques for the measurement of end product oxidative damage. What makes a good marker of oxidative damage? A good marker of oxidative damage must be increased when oxidative stress is present (i.e., when induced by known treatments or agents that cause oxidative damage, e.g., paraquat, diquat, ionizing radiation, hyperoxia), and it must remain unchanged when oxidative stress is absent. The marker must measure a product that is endogenously present, not produced during the isolation procedure. This latter requirement is not trivial, and it affects several assays: even if a difference between a treatment and a control is observed, if the majority of the signal is artifactually produced during isolation, it will be very difficult to conclude that the difference between the samples did not arise during the preparation procedure (rather than having been endogenously present).

2.5.1 Lipid Peroxidation

Lipid peroxidation is a chain reaction in which carbon-centered radicals at the allylic position of polyunsaturated fatty acids (PUFA) react with molecular oxygen (at near diffusion-limited rates), thereby forming a peroxyl radical (ROO'). ROO' can then abstract the allylic H-atom from nearby PUFA (becoming a lipid peroxide ROO-H), which creates another carbon-centered radical, thereby repeating the process described above (for review, see p 291 in [3]). The initial proton abstraction event (“the chain initiator”) is thought to be initiated mainly by superoxide (in its protonated form, HO₂⁺ [21, 22]). The higher the number of double bonds (unsaturation) in a fatty acid, the greater its propensity to peroxidize. In subsequent reactions, lipid peroxides can undergo a variety of reactions, yielding a myriad of end products, e.g., reactive aldehydes (malondialdehyde), alkanes, isoprostanes, and isoketals. Vitamin E (α-tocopherol) plays a critical role in minimizing lipid peroxidation; in fact, dietary induction of vitamin E deficiency results in profound oxidative stress, and if unchecked leads to death [142].

The oldest assay to measure lipid peroxidation is the thiobarbituric acid-reactive substances assay (p 407 in [3]). This assay measures thiobarbituric acid-reactive substances: the reactive end product aldehydes formed during peroxidation of polyunsaturated fatty acids. It is now understood that, although suitable for in vitro chemical systems, this assay is inappropriate to determine lipid peroxidation in vivo, because >90% of the signal actually originates from artifactual oxidation during the harsh isolation procedure.

In the last decade, many new assays to measure lipid peroxides in vivo have been developed. The most popular marker for measuring lipid peroxidation is the gas chromatography-mass spectrometry F₂-isoprostane assay developed by Roberts and Morrow [143, 144]. F₂-isoprostanes are cyclooxygenase-independent oxidation products of arachidonic acid, which are produced in every tissue where this fatty
acid is present [145, 146]. $F_2$-isoprostanes are eliminated via the bloodstream, enabling estimation of whole-organism lipid peroxidation by measuring plasma $F_2$-isoprostanes [147]. $F_2$-isoprostanes have been reported to be elevated in a variety of human pathologies [148]. Since isoprostanes are terminal end products, isolation artifacts are minimized (though not eliminated, because $F_2$-isoprostane levels increase if tissues are stored below $-80\,^\circ\mathrm{C}$). It is our opinion that plasma $F_2$-isoprostanes are currently the most robust marker for measurements of oxidative damage. It has been reported that $F_2$-isoprostanes are dramatically increased in situations of oxidative stress (e.g., diquat, $\mathrm{CCl}_4$), with the increases being much higher than that with previously used markers (e.g., 8-oxo-7,8-dihydro-2'-deoxyguanosine [8-oxo-dG]). In addition, Jackson and Morrow have extended their initial findings with isoprostanes, demonstrating that peroxidation products of docohexanoic acid, F4 neuroprostanes [149], are also useful markers of lipid peroxidation, especially in neuronal tissues.

2.5.2 DNA Oxidative Damage

Much work has gone into exploring the hypothesis that oxidative damage to DNA causes mutations and cancer. At least 100 different types of oxidative DNA lesions have been reported, including base modifications (e.g., 8-oxo-dG, thymidine glycol, and 8-hydroxycytosine), single- and double-strand breaks and interstrand cross-links [150, 151]. Measuring DNA oxidative damage has a tortuous history that is still not fully settled [152]. Although DNA oxidation yields many products, only a few have been rigorously quantified in vivo [153, 154]; of these, the most popular is 8-oxo-dG. The levels of 8-oxo-dG are measured by high-performance liquid chromatography (HPLC), typically using an electrochemical (EC) detector. The applicability of this assay to estimating the [low] endogenous levels of DNA oxidative damage in vivo has been questioned [155], because large artifactual increases occur during DNA extraction. For example, the values of 8-oxo-dG for the same tissue from the same species have ranged over 3 orders of magnitude [152]. This assay is typically carried out on whole fresh tissue or frozen cells. The sample is first homogenized, and digested with proteinase K at $56\,^\circ\mathrm{C}$; DNA is extracted with phenol and subsequently hydrolyzed into nucleotides (using nuclease P1), then converted to nucleosides by using alkaline phosphatase. The nucleosides are then injected into the HPLC, and 8-oxo-dG is detected electrochemically. Considering the harshness of these treatments, the low redox potential of guanosine, and the large excess of deoxyguanosine (dG) vs. 8-oxo-dG (even a 0.01% artifactual oxidation of dG would translate into a 10-fold artifactual increase of 8-oxo-dG [156]), it is easy to see how artifactual oxidations could inflate the measured amount of 8-oxo-dG. Several factors causing artifactual oxidation have been identified [157], including light from fluorescent lamps [158]. The use of phenol during the DNA extraction procedure also seems problematic [159]; this can be avoided by substituting NaI in the DNA extraction protocol [157, 159]. Other strategies to minimize oxidation involve the addition of desferrioximine (to prevent Fenton chemistry) or antioxidant enzymes such as catalase [157, 160]. Using these optimizations, the level of 8-oxo-dG has
been measured to be ~0.5 per 10⁶ dG in human lymphocytes and ~2 per 10⁶ dG in rat liver DNA [157, 160]. Even if artificial oxidation during DNA extraction were reduced to zero, this would not address the possibility of artificial DNA oxidation during tissue homogenization: this is relevant because homolytic bond cleavage and free radical formation have been demonstrated under those conditions. Experiments with H₂¹⁸O under anaerobic conditions may resolve this issue, because any 8-oxo-dG produced artificially would have been distinguishable by mass spectroscopy [160]. Significantly, even the lowest values obtained using the HPLC-EC method are still an order of magnitude higher than those obtained with the formamidopyrimidine-DNA glycosylase (Fgp-glycosylase) comet assay [152, 161]. The comet assay does not require tissue homogenization and DNA hydrolysis, but can only be used on cells, not whole tissues [162, 163]. It quantifies the number of strand breaks after treatment with Fpg-glycosylase, which converts 8-oxo-dG into single-strand breaks. The ~10-fold discrepancy between these two assays has not yet been resolved, and it cannot be attributed to differences in endogenous endonuclease activity, since the difference persists even in Ogg1 knockout mice, which lack base excision repair [164, 165].

2.5.3 Protein Oxidation

Numerous oxidative modifications have been documented in proteins. Proteins vary in their susceptibilities to different types of oxidants, and in the sites and degree of oxidation. Such differences are generally influenced by types of accessible amino acid residues in the proteins. The best-known types of protein oxidation are the nitration of tyrosine, the sulfoxidation of methionine, and the carbonylation of most amine-containing amino acid residues [166–169].

Peroxynitrite (ONOO⁻), which can be formed by the reaction of NO⁻ with superoxide, NO⁻ + O₂⁻ → ONOO⁻ (k = 7 × 10⁹ M⁻¹ s⁻¹), can convert tyrosine to nitrotyrosine. The hydroxyl group of certain tyrosine residues is critical in some enzymes and cell-signalling molecules (e.g., tyrosine phosphorylation). It was shown that for glutamine synthetase in E. coli, nitration of either one of two different tyrosine residues inhibited the enzymatic function [170]. There is also evidence indicating that nitrotyrosilation of Mn-SOD decreases its activity [171, 172].

Sulfur-containing amino acids (methionine and cysteine) can be oxidized by hydrogen peroxide, superoxide, peroxynitrite, and perhaps by molecular oxygen itself. However, these are the only oxidative modifications of proteins that can be repaired. ROS-mediated oxidation of methionine (Met) residues leads to methionine sulfoxide (MetO), consisting of a mixture of the S- and R-epimers of MetO. Methionine sulfoxide reductases (MsrA) catalyze the thiol-dependent reduction of MetO back to Met. The S-epimer of MetO is reduced back to Met by MsrA, and the R-epimer by MsrB. Importantly however, the oxidized form of thioredoxin produced during the reduction of MetO can be converted back to reduced form by the enzyme thioredoxin reductase, in an NADPH-dependent reaction. This cyclic oxidation and reduction of methionine has been proposed to play an antioxidant role [173]. Reversible oxidation of cysteine (thiol) residues in turn mediates the
antioxidant function of glutathione, thioredoxin, metallothioneins, glutaredoxin, and peroxiredoxins. Oxidation of thiols (sulfhydryl) yields disulfides, and further oxidation yields sulfonic and sulfenic acids, and eventually sulfones [174]. Certain enzymes, such as GAPDH, have active site cysteines that can become irreversibly oxidized [37–39, 175]. A newly discovered antioxidant gene, termed sulfiredoxin, can reduce sulfenic acid back to sulfhydril (thiol) [85, 176]. The sulfones are still considered irreversible.

Carbonylation of proteins can occur by several different oxidative pathways, including metal-catalyzed oxidation of specific amino acid side chains (histidine, arginine, proline, lysine, and threonine) and adduction of carbonyl-containing oxidized lipids (e.g., 4-hydroxynonenal, malondialdehyde) and sugars [177]. Carbonyl content of samples has been popularly used as a global indicator of protein oxidation levels, perhaps due in part to the simplicity of the assay (carbonyl groups can be detected spectrophotometrically after their reactions with 2,4-dinitrophenylhydrazine), although this assay is also not free from controversy [178]. Specific proteins, such as adenine nucleotide translocase [179] and aconitase [180], seem be preferentially carbonylated with age in flies. In mice, carbonic anhydrase 3 and CuZn-SOD are preferentially carbonylated during aging [178, 181]. Oxidative modification of bacterial glutamine synthetase results in its inactivation and degradation [182, 183]. Protein carbonylation also can be quantified by gas chromatography-mass spectrometry [184, 185]. For example, glutamic and aminoadipic semialdehyde are the markers of direct protein oxidation by ROS, and they are found to be the major constituent of the total protein carbonyl value [184], whereas $N\epsilon$-(malondialdehyde)lysine and $N\epsilon$-(carboxymethyl)lysine (CML) arise from lipid peroxidation products [186]. $N\epsilon$-(carboxyethyl)lysine and CML also can be formed through glycoxidative damage from sugars [186, 187].

2.6 How Does Oxidative Damage Kill or Compromise the Function of the Cell?

In the preceding sections, we outlined the chemistry of some of the best-described ROS, and the most easily measureable types of damage that ROS can inflict on macromolecules. Here, we summarize how these oxidative modifications can compromise cellular function or lead to cell death.

2.6.1 Lipid Peroxidation

Lipid peroxidation of membranes has the immediate effect of decreasing membrane fluidity and increasing ionic permeability [188]. High enough levels of lipid peroxidation can directly lead to loss of membrane barrier function, cell lysis, and cell death. Because ionic gradients play a critical role in several physiological processes, including energy metabolism (mitochondrial inner membrane) and neuronal
conductance (plasma membrane), even moderately increased lipid peroxidation has the potential to be highly disruptive to overall tissue and organism function. Deficiency of the chain-breaking antioxidant, vitamin E, results in many deleterious phenotypes, including fertility loss, neurological phenotypes [189], myopathy [142], lipofuscin accumulation [190], and erythrocyte lysis; if severe enough, vitamin E deficiency results in death [142]. Absence of the lipid hydroperoxide-scavenging enzyme glutathione peroxidase 4 results in early embryonic lethality in mice [191], testifying to the great toxicity of lipid peroxidation.

2.6.2 DNA Oxidative Damage

Damage to DNA by reactive oxygen species falls into two main categories: damage to nucleotide bases and strand breaks (which, biologically, predominantly result in mutagenesis and genomic instability, respectively). Mutations, in turn, contribute to carcinogenesis, whereas genomic instability contributes both to carcinogenesis and, more critically, to cell death. There is an increasing body of evidence in model organisms (e.g., yeast and *E. coli*) that oxidative stress is a strong contributor to both mutagenesis and genomic instability. For example, genetic ablation of CuZn-SOD and peroxiredoxin 1 (tsa1) cause a 5- and 10-fold increase, respectively, in mutagenesis in yeast, as measured by the canavanine method [15, 72, 192–194]. This increased mutagenesis is entirely prevented by growth under anaerobic conditions [15, 73] (complete absence of oxygen implies no formation of superoxide and H$_2$O$_2$). In fact, spontaneous mutagenesis also is decreased $\sim$3-fold by anaerobic conditions in wild-type yeast, indicating that oxidative stress is an important driver of mutagenesis even under antioxidant enzyme sufficient conditions [73]. Similar results also have been obtained in *E. coli* [195]. Oxidative stress brought about by antioxidant enzyme ablation also increases genomic instability in yeast. Knockout of peroxiredoxin 1 (tsa1) resulted in a 10-fold increase in gross chromosomal rearrangements [73, 74]. Again, anaerobic conditions dramatically reduce the gross chromosomal rearrangement rate, not only in the antioxidant knockouts, but also in wild-type control yeast [73].

Finally, although knockout of neither sod1 nor tsa1 is lethal by itself in yeast grown under optimal conditions (rich media), it was recently reported that combining sod1$^{-/-}$ or tsa1$^{-/-}$ with a wide assortment of knockouts of DNA repair genes resulted in synthetic lethality [196]. For example, a double knockout of either sod1 or tsa1 with rad51 (involved in double-strand break recombination repair) was synthetically lethal [73, 196]. In the case of tsa1$^{-/-}$rad 51$^{-/-}$ double knockout, the synthetic lethality could be rescued by growth under anaerobic conditions [73].

These data in single-celled model systems complement basic chemical work, and they establish that ROS are a significant cause of DNA damage in vivo, driving both mutagenesis and genomic instability. However, it is worth remembering that yeast and *E. coli* grow at 21% O$_2$ (normal atmospheric oxygen tension), whereas most mammalian cells are exposed to $\sim$10 times less oxygen in situ; the relative importance of DNA oxidative damage may therefore be less in higher organisms.
2.6.3 Oxidative Damage to Proteins

Oxidative damage to proteins can be physiologically detrimental by several pathways. We briefly discuss two such pathways here: inactivation of enzymatic function and stimulation of protein aggregation.

There are several well-described examples of direct, selective inactivation of enzymatic function by different ROS: aconitase (superoxide [197], reversible), ribonucleotide reductase (superoxide [31], irreversible), GAPDH (H₂O₂, irreversible [37–39, 175]), carbonic anhydrase [181], and glutamine synthetase [182]. In certain cases, the ROS-dependent inactivation has clearly demonstrable phenotypical and metabolic consequences, e.g., the lysine and methionine auxotrophies of sod1⁻/⁻ yeast can directly be ascribed to the superoxide-dependent inactivation of iron sulfur-containing enzymes [198–200].

It is increasingly appreciated that protein aggregation plays a critical role in many (most prominently neurodegenerative) diseases [201]. The notion that ROS can contribute to protein aggregation has been long known, especially considering the role of ROS in formation of lipofuscin, the age pigment composed of aggregated, oxidized proteins and lipids [202, 203]. Increasing evidence indicates that, at least in vitro, oxidative modification increases thermodynamic instability and facilitates protein aggregation, e.g., α-synuclein (Parkinson’s disease) [204] and CuZn-SOD (amyotrophic lateral sclerosis). It has been suggested that this is a key pathway by which oxidative damage contributes to aging [205].

3 Conclusions

Chemical studies indicate that ROS can damage a number of different cellular macromolecules, and physiological studies in model organisms indicate that ROS can compromise cell function and viability in many ways. However, an efficient and complex network of enzymatic and nonenzymatic players does exist; how much oxidative damage “escapes” the effects of this network under normal conditions is still not fully resolved. Finally, it is important to recall that oxygen tension in animals is typically 10 times lower than that to which the above-mentioned model organisms are exposed.

References

25. Winterbourn CC, Kettle AJ. Radical-radical reactions of superoxide: a potential route to toxicity. Biochem Biophys Res Commun 2003;305(3):729–36.


Section II
The Role of Oxidative Stress in Aging

Part II-A
Different Model Systems
3
Retrograde Response, Oxidative Stress, and Cellular Senescence

João F. Passos and Thomas von Zglinicki

Summary  Mitochondria are major sources of reactive oxygen species (ROS) in cells, and they have been proposed to have an important role in cellular ageing. Recent evidence suggests that these organelles play a causal role in telomere-dependent senescence of human cells in culture. However, the relation between mitochondrial ROS production and replicative senescence might be more complicated than just simple cause and effect, because mitochondrial dysfunction has been shown to induce a variety of genes involved in nuclear-mitochondrial cross talk. Evidence suggests that this retrograde response might have an important, yet still relatively unexplored role in cell ageing, affecting mitochondrial function, ROS production, and, consequently, the life span of cells.

Keywords Senescence, telomeres, mitochondria, retrograde signalling, oxidative stress, fibroblasts.

1 Introduction

Growing evidence supports a role of oxidative stress in ageing. Because mitochondria are the main cellular site of production of reactive oxygen species (ROS), it was hypothesized >30 years ago that their dysfunction could be responsible for ageing, due to progressive accumulation of oxidative damage [1].

Historically, the role of mitochondria in the model of replicative senescence has been largely disregarded, possibly due to early studies that failed to observe significant differences in mitochondria between early and late passage cultured cells and a generalized notion that cellular division could dilute molecular damage. Moreover, the discovery that telomeres, the ends of chromosomes, shorten with cell division, suggested that senescence was the result of a counting mechanism, a deterministic biological clock, and as such, incompatible with ROS-generated random molecular damage.

Recently, the role of free radicals in the model of replicative senescence has generated substantial interest. Various studies have proposed that mitochondria
have a considerable impact on the replicative life span of cells. Moreover, it has been proposed that ROS (mainly from nonmitochondrial sources) also could contribute to the establishment and maintenance of the senescent phenotype, possibly acting as a tumor suppressor mechanism. Here, we analyze evidence for the role of ROS in the model of replicative senescence and the importance of mitochondria in this process.

2 Role of Mitochondrial ROS in Telomere-Dependent Senescence

Hayflick and Moorhead showed that embryo-derived fibroblasts can divide 50 ± 10 times before reaching replicative senescence when cultured in vitro [2]. The potential number of divisions became known as the “Hayflick limit.” It was soon suggested that the shortening of telomeres counted the finite number of cell divisions and triggered replicative senescence in normal diploid cells [3, 4]. Later, this idea was confirmed experimentally [5] and supported by the observation that ectopic expression of the catalytic subunit of telomerase, an enzyme able to elongate telomeres, leads to immortalization of cells in culture [6]. The concept of a defined molecular mechanism that could count cell divisions, like beads on an abacus, led some enthusiasts to believe that this was evidence for an ageing clock. But soon, it was found that environmental stress, in particular, the level of ROS in a cell, also would affect the rate of telomere shortening [7, 8] and that individual cells could reach senescence much earlier than the intended “Hayflick limit” with surprisingly short telomeres [9]. Moreover, it was found that these early senescent cells possessed damaged mitochondria, producing high levels of ROS and that this affected telomeres directly [10].

Is there evidence supporting a causal role for mitochondria in replicative senescence? Several studies showed that cell senescence was associated with high levels of endogenous ROS [11, 12] and with accumulation of oxidation products, such as protein carbonyls and lipofuscin [13, 14]. It also was shown that senescent fibroblasts have impaired metabolism, with strong reduction of ATP and other nucleotide triphosphates [15].

Recently, we showed that senescent cells display mitochondrial dysfunction, characterized by lower mitochondrial membrane potential, mitochondrial DNA (mtDNA) damage, and increased superoxide production [10]. Clearly, this evidence is merely correlative and cannot indicate causality. However, several studies suggest a causal role for mitochondrial ROS production in replicative senescence.

First, improvement of mitochondrial function by diverse interventions has been shown to extend life span: Selective targeting of antioxidants directly to the mitochondria counteracted telomere shortening and increased life span in fibroblasts under mild oxidative stress [16]. Continuous treatment with nicotinamide, which changes mitochondrial function and reduces ROS generation, has been reported to extend life span by decelerating telomere shortening [17]. Also, pharmacologic
mild chronic uncoupling of mitochondria that reduced the production of superoxide anion improved telomere maintenance and extended telomere-dependent life span [10]. A similar effect of mild uncoupling has been observed in yeast *Saccharomyces cerevisiae* [18].

Second, damage to the mitochondria has been shown to decrease the replicative life span of cells. Mitochondrial dysfunction generated by severe mitochondrial depolarization by using an uncoupling agent (carbonyl cyanide p-trifluoromethoxy-phenylhydrazone [FCCP]) led to an increased production of ROS, telomere attrition, telomere loss, and chromosome fusion in mouse embryos [19]. Also, mild oxidative stress by exposure to hyperoxia decreases the replicative life span of cells, and it accelerates telomere shortening [8, 20]. There is evidence supporting that oxidative stress generated by hyperoxia is dependent on use of oxygen by the mitochondria [21]. Moreover, it is known that mitochondrial function is severely affected with replicative senescence.

Thus, from these data, mitochondrial ROS do play, at least partially, a causal role in telomere-dependent replicative senescence. Nevertheless, it is still unclear what the trigger is for mitochondrial ROS generation. According to the mitochondrial theory of ageing, first proposed by Harman in 1972, damage to the mitochondrial DNA would be the main cause for free radical production [1]. However, new evidence suggests that this might not be as simple as initially formulated.

Recent work has shown that by creating homozygous knock-in mice that express a proofreading-deficient version of the nucleus-encoded catalytic subunit of mtDNA polymerase γ (PolgA), an extremely high level of mtDNA mutations and deletions could be attained. These knock-in mice showed a significant decrease in life span, apparently supporting Harman’s theory [22]. However, the mechanism of this phenomenon remains unknown, because no increased markers of oxidative stress or defects in cellular proliferation were found in these animals [23, 24]. Importantly, mice that are heterozygous for PolgA function show no significant reduction in life span despite an mtDNA mutation burden 30 times higher than in old wild-type animals [25]. These studies suggest that mtDNA mutation load does not limit life span of wild-type mice and that mtDNA mutations, even at very high levels, do not necessarily lead to increased mitochondrial ROS generation. Mitochondrial dysfunction and generation of ROS might be consequences of other still unexplored factors occurring with cell ageing.

Other recent studies have begun to explore uncharted territories in the relation between ageing and mitochondrial biology, way beyond the simple ROS-leading to damage-leading to ROS cycle. Recently, research has been focused upon the impact of nuclear genes and their effect on mitochondrial function with respect to the ageing process. Caloric restriction, which is able to extend life span in various species, has been related to increased mitochondrial biogenesis [26]. Resveratrol, a sirtuin activator, has been shown to lead to increased mitochondrial biogenesis via activation of the nuclear transcription factor PGC-1α and to extension of life span [27]. It also has been shown that PGC-1α expression is required for induction of antioxidant enzymes, such as that glutathione peroxidase 1 and superoxide dismutase 2 [28].
Changes in mitochondrial function and biogenesis due to alterations in nuclear gene expression have been first described in budding yeast and named retrograde response. In Section 3, we review evidence relating retrograde response to replicative senescence.

3 Is Retrograde Signaling Part of a Senescence Signature? Does It Have a Causal Role?

Respiratory dysfunctional yeast cells compensate for mitochondrial dysfunction by up-regulation of a defined set of nuclear genes through activation of the transcription factors Rtg1p–Rtg3p. Microarray studies have shown that these cells increase transcription of genes coding for glycolytic enzymes, peroxisomal biogenesis genes, glyoxylate pathway genes, and genes involved in anaplerotic pathways [29, 30]. Also, these pathways are activated as a consequence of mitochondrial dysfunction in normal yeast replicative ageing [31]. In yeast respiratory deficient cells, the induction of the retrograde response compensates for a nonfunctional tricarboxylic acid (TCA) cycle. Because succinate cannot be oxidized to fumarate, the cell responds by inducing production of oxaloacetate and acetyl-CoA by anaplerotic pathways, i.e., alternative pathways to replenish TCA intermediates. In yeast, it has been suggested that the main purpose of these metabolic rearrangements is the maintenance of glutamate supplies.

Mitochondrial retrograde signaling in mammalian cells was initially described in C2C12 skeletal myoblasts [32] and in human lung carcinoma A549 cells [33]. The main trigger for this response in mammalian cells seems to be the decline of mitochondrial membrane potential. Experimentally, retrograde response was induced by either treatment of cells with ethidium bromide to deplete them of mtDNA or by using mitochondria-specific ionophores, such as carbonyl cyanide m-chlorophenylhydrazone. Because mitochondria also function as major calcium stores, a drop in mitochondrial membrane potential leads to calcium release from the mitochondria (and compromised calcium uptake), increasing cytosolic free Ca\(^{2+}\). Calcium seems to be the link between mitochondrial function and nuclear gene expression, as several studies have shown.

In both C2C12 skeletal myoblasts and human lung carcinoma cells, mitochondrial dysfunction caused increased expression of a number of genes involved in calcium homeostasis, such as ryanodine receptor I or II (RyR1 or RyR2), calcineurin, calreticulin, and calsequestrin [32, 33]. Arnould et al. [34] have shown that increase of cytosolic free Ca\(^{2+}\) induced by mitochondrial dysfunction was responsible for activation of Ca\(^{2+}\)/calmodulin-dependent protein kinase type IV, and consequent activation of cAMP response element-binding protein by phosphorylation (Table 3.1).

There is uncertainty concerning the initial trigger of retrograde signaling. It is known that production of superoxide anion in the inner mitochondrial membrane can activate uncoupling proteins [35]. Moreover, cellular oxidative stress can
Table 3.1 List of genes, proteins, or both involved in metabolism, Ca\textsuperscript{2+}-dependent signaling, mitochondrial function and assembly, and stress response and apoptosis, with changed expression after mitochondrial stress induced by depletion of mtDNA genome [Rho(0)], metabolic inhibitors, senescence, and hyperoxia (40% O\textsubscript{2}) in different mammalian cell lines. Names of genes are written as found in respective reference.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Function</th>
<th>Gene</th>
<th>Method</th>
<th>How mitochondrial stress was induced</th>
<th>Cell type</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Metabolism</td>
<td>HK1</td>
<td>RT-PCR</td>
<td>Rho (0)</td>
<td>T143B, ARPE19, and GMO6225</td>
<td>44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>GLUT1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>PCK2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>GCK</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>LDHA</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>LDHB</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>FBP1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>GAPD</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ENO1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>PKM2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>PC</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>CS</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>CKB</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ACAT2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ACACA</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ACACB</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>PEX6</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>DIA1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Glut4</td>
<td>NB</td>
<td>Rho (0)</td>
<td>C2C12 rhabdomyoblasts and A549 human lung carcinoma cells</td>
<td>42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>PEP carboxy</td>
<td>kinase</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Hexokinase</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ACSL5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>PTE1</td>
<td>MA</td>
<td>Senescence/hyperoxia</td>
<td>MRC-5 fibroblasts</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>GLS</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>HSD17B12</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>GALNT10</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>AK3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>HK2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>LOX</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>PDP2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>RODH</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>OGDH</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ALDH1A1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>PDK4</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>FABP4</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ATP8B1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>GLS</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>GCLM</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(continued)
Table 3.1 (continued)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Function</th>
<th>Gene</th>
<th>Method</th>
<th>How mitochondrial stress was induced</th>
<th>Cell type</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Ca-dependent signaling</td>
<td>RYR-1</td>
<td>RT-PCR</td>
<td>Rho (0)</td>
<td>T143B, ARPE19, and GMO6242</td>
<td>[44]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ikB</td>
<td>WB</td>
<td>Rho (0) + mitochondrial metabolic inhibitors</td>
<td>Mouse C2C12 myocytes</td>
<td>[32]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Cn A</td>
<td>WB</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>RelA</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>NFATc</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ATF2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>RyR-2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Cathepsin-L</td>
<td>WB</td>
<td>Rho (0)</td>
<td>Human pulmonary carcinoma A549 cells</td>
<td>[33]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>TGFβ1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Calreticulin</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Calsequestrin</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Calcineurin</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Egr-1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ATF2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>NFAT</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Phospho-p44</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>mapk</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Phospho-p42</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>mapk</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ERK1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ERK2</td>
<td>WB</td>
<td>FCCP</td>
<td>Rat pheochromacytoma PC12 cells</td>
<td>[49]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>CamkIV</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>CREB</td>
<td>WB</td>
<td>Rho (0)</td>
<td>143B human osteosarcoma cell line and MERRF cybrid cell line mutated for tRNA(Lys) (A8344G)</td>
<td>[34]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>RyR1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(continued)
### Table 3.1 (continued)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Calsequestrin</th>
<th>Rho (0)</th>
<th>C2C12 rhabdomyoblasts and A549 human lung carcinoma cells</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Calreticulin</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cathepsin</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TGFβ1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Epiregulin</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ATP2C1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MAP2K3</td>
<td>MA</td>
<td>Senescence</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PLCB4</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CABYR</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TGFB2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PLCB4</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IGFBP3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CABYR</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PRKCA</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BAMBI</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VAPNS2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CAP2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PRKCH</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLEC3F2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CAV2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CREB3L1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TGFB2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CALM2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EREG</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DCG2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GHR</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CEBPE</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GUCA1A</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IGFBP3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SULF1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TGFBP2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PDE4DIP</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ADCY3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TGIF2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GPSM2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CREB3L4</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PDE1A</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ARHGAP11A</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GUCY1B3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ITPKB</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PDE1A</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LTB4P</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>THBS2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NFAT5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MAP3K8</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(continued)
Table 3.1 (continued)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Function</th>
<th>Gene</th>
<th>Method</th>
<th>How mitochondrial stress was induced</th>
<th>Cell type</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Mitochondrial function and assembly</td>
<td>MDH1</td>
<td>RT-PCR</td>
<td>Rho (0)</td>
<td>T143B, ARPE19, and GMO6225</td>
<td>[44]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>MDH2, SDHA, COXVB, ATP5B, ANT1, ANT2, CKMT1, CKMT2, CYTC</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>COXVB</td>
<td>WB</td>
<td>Rho (0) + mitochondrial metabolic inhibitors</td>
<td>Mouse C2C12 myocytes</td>
<td>[32]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>VDAC</td>
<td>NB</td>
<td>Rho (0)</td>
<td>C2C12 rhabdomyoblasts and A549 human lung carcinoma cells</td>
<td>[42]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>6 MtDNA transcript, Tim44, Tom40, CPS1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>NRF1, UAP1L1</td>
<td>MA</td>
<td>Senescence</td>
<td>MRC-5 fibroblasts</td>
<td>[10]</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(continued)
### Table 3.1 (continued)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Stress response and Apoptosis</th>
<th>SCARB1</th>
<th>RT-PCR</th>
<th>Rho (0)</th>
<th>T143B, ARPE19, and GMO6225</th>
<th>[44]</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>SCARB2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TXN</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TXNR1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TXNR2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SOD2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CAT</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GPX3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HSF1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HSPD1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HSPE1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bcl-2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

| Bid                           | WB     | Human pulmonary carcinoma A549 cells | [33] |
| Bax                           |        |                                     |      |
| Bcl-XL                        |        |                                     |      |
| Bcl2                          |        |                                     |      |

| Bid                           | NB     | C2C12 rhabdomyoblasts and A549 human lung carcinoma cells | [42] |
| Bax                           |        |                                     |      |
| P53                           |        |                                     |      |
| Bcl-2L1                       |        |                                     |      |

| PAWR                          | MA     | Senescence | MRC-5 fibroblasts | [44] |
| SOD2                          |        |            |                  |      |
| Bcl-2L11                      |        |            |                  |      |
| CCAR1                         |        |            |                  |      |
| SOD2                          |        |            |                  |      |

| Bcl-X                          | WB     | Rho (0) + mitochondrial metabolic inhibitors | C2C12 skeletal myoblasts | [43] |

Survivin

WB, Western blot; NB, Northern blot; MA: microarrays; RT-PCR, reverse transcriptase-polymerase chain reaction.
transcriptionally induce expression of uncoupling protein (UCP)-2 and UCP-3 [10, 28], resulting in a decline in mitochondrial membrane potential [10]. Thus, it is possible that the main trigger of retrograde response is ROS generation, leading to expression and activation of UCPs, and decline of mitochondrial membrane potential and calcium release.

Transcriptional activation of the expression of nuclear encoded mitochondrial components as adaptation to perceived mitochondrial dysfunction seems to be a major function of retrograde signalling. Partial depletion of mtDNA and treatment with mitochondrial metabolic inhibitors has been shown to result in enhanced expression of various nuclear genes involved in control of mitochondrial inner membrane components [32], and uncoupling of mitochondria from HeLa cells has been reported to increase oxygen consumption and increase the protein levels of δ-aminolevulinic acid synthase, an early marker for mitochondrial biogenesis [36]. Nuclear respiratory NRF-1, a transcription factor that has been linked to the transcriptional control of many genes involved in mitochondrial function and biogenesis, has been shown to be up-regulated in HeLa cells depleted of mtDNA [37]. Also, both NRF-1 and mitochondrial transcription factor A, mtDNA-binding protein essential for maintenance, replication, and transcription of mtDNA, are up-regulated in response to mitochondrial lipopolysaccharide-induced damage [38].

Various lines of evidence suggest that retrograde signalling is also a feature of replicative senescence.

First, senescent cells display clear mitochondrial dysfunction, i.e., increased superoxide production despite low mitochondrial membrane potential, together with mtDNA damage [10].

Second, it has been described that when cells reach the end of their replicative life span, they suffer changes in calcium homeostasis. Senescent human skin and lung fibroblasts have been shown to have higher cytosolic calcium concentrations and lower capacity to store calcium than fibroblasts in early passage [10, 39]. This is consistent with evidence showing that impaired mitochondrial metabolism [15] and lower mitochondrial membrane potential due to expression of UCP-2 in senescent fibroblasts [10].

Third, increased glutamate production has been found in senescent fibroblasts together with significant changes in glucose metabolism, including increased activity of the glycolitic pathway [15]. These changes are highly reminiscent of what has been shown in yeast retrograde response.

Fourth, senescent fibroblasts also show increased mitochondrial mass and mtDNA copy number [10, 40], which could be interpreted as an adaptive response to mitochondrial dysfunction.

Finally, apoptosis is another feature linking retrograde signaling and senescence. Senescent fibroblasts have been shown to be resistant to apoptosis, and this has been related to expression of antiapoptotic protein Bcl-2 [41]. mtDNA-depleted cells have been shown to be significantly more resistant to etoposide-mediated apoptosis than control cells, consistent with an increase in Bcl-2 expression [42, 43].

In conclusion, it seems likely that retrograde response is activated in senescent cells. However, studies of retrograde senescence in mammalian cells have not yet yielded an actual retrograde response signature in terms of gene expression pattern.
In mammalian cells, gene expression in response to depletion of mitochondrial DNA or metabolic inhibitors is largely cell type specific, as several studies have demonstrated [42, 44–46] (Table 3.1). Furthermore, the processes by which mitochondrial dysfunction is induced also might modify gene expression patterns. In fact, a gene expression profiling study of senescent fibroblasts did identify increased expression of genes involved Ca\textsuperscript{2+} binding and Ca\textsuperscript{2+}-mediated signaling, glycolysis, and Krebs cycle enzymes; mitochondrial biogenesis and function; and stress response/apoptosis that thus might be regarded as candidate signature genes for retrograde response in fibroblast senescence [10], even if they show essentially no overlap with candidates found in other systems at the single gene level (Table 3.1).

One question remains, What is the functional consequence of retrograde response in replicative senescence? Does it extend the doubling potential of cells? In the budding yeast \textit{S. cerevisiae}, early activation of retrograde response led to extension of replicative life span [47]. However, retrograde response also has been observed to occur progressively with age in yeast, accompanied by a decline in mitochondrial function. Therefore, it is possible that with age, the beneficial effects of retrograde response are not able to counteract the progressive deterioration of cells. There are other lines of evidence supporting this hypothesis in another model organism. Directed RNA interference inactivation of components of the mitochondrial electron transport chain early in development have been shown to increase longevity in \textit{Caenorhabditis elegans} [48]. However, no effect is observed if mitochondrial dysfunction is induced in adult animals.

In mammalian systems, there are few available data concerning the effects of retrograde response on longevity. Mitochondrial dysfunction induced by a high dose of FCCP has been shown to decrease cell survival in mouse embryos [19]. Mitochondrial dysfunction and retrograde response accompany replicative senescence in human fibroblasts [10]. However, mild uncoupling by dinitrophenol (DNP) has been shown to extend replicative life span in human fibroblasts [10]. Although this seems superficially similar to the situation in yeast, it needs to be stressed that in this latter study, there is no evidence that mild uncoupling led to activation of retrograde signaling. In fact, long-term exposure to DNP resulted in a lower mitochondrial mass than controls when cells were approaching the end of their replicative life span. Increased mitochondrial mass has been described as a marker of induction of retrograde response in both yeast and mammalian cells [31, 32].

### 4 Conclusions

Even though recent data have questioned whether mtDNA mutations do have functional consequences in the ageing process, mitochondria do play an important role in ageing, which surpasses the role of their genome-encoded components. The ability to store calcium and its dependence on mitochondrial membrane potential, the role of uncoupling proteins, and mitochondrial biogenesis are starting to be recognized
as important players in both cellular and organismal ageing. In cellular senescence, it is now evident that several processes involved in the response to mitochondrial dysfunction and differential expression of several genes may impact on replicative longevity, both in budding yeast and in human primary cells.

References

3 Oxidative Stress and Cellular Senescence


49. Luo Y, Bond JD, Ingram VM. Compromised mitochondrial function leads to increased cytosolic calcium and to activation of MAP kinases. Proc Natl Acad Sci U S A 1997;94:9705–9710.
4 Reactive Oxygen Species in Molecular Pathways Controlling Aging in the Filamentous Fungus *Podospora anserina*

Heinz D. Osiewacz and Christian Q. Scheckhuber

**Summary** To generate ATP via different types of respiration, the impact of reactive oxygen species (ROS) as by-products generated at the inner mitochondrial membrane is well analyzed and documented. Moreover, other pathways of ROS generation seem to be of relevance, but they are currently less explored. It now seems that ROS not only play a key role in the age-related damaging of biomolecules that are essential for proper cellular function but also in age-related signaling pathways. In particular, pathways related to apoptosis that finally bring life of senescent *P. anserina* cultures to an end are currently emerging to play a crucial role. Moreover, cellular defense and maintenance functions were demonstrated to effectively modulate life span. Among these functions, ROS scavenging, the tight control of cellular copper levels, retrograde responses, and mechanisms maintaining a population of functional mitochondria are of crucial importance. The elucidation of additional candidate pathways is a challenge for future research to reveal the mechanisms governing aging and life span control in a holistic view.

**Keywords** Reactive oxygen species (ROS), mitochondria, respiration, retrograde response, apoptosis, copper homeostasis.

1 Introduction: Senescence in *Podospora anserina*

*Podospora anserina* is a filamentous fungus extensively studied as an aging model at the organismic level [1–4]. In contrast to many other fungi that seem to be immortal, the life span of *P. anserina* is limited. A given strain is characterized by a specific time in which the filamentous cells of a culture, the hyphae, grow at their tips and form a culture termed a “mycelium,” which represents a macroscopically visible individuum. During aging, the morphology of the mycelium changes (Fig. 4.1), the growth rate slows down, and finally growth ceases and the colony dies at the tips [5, 6]. Mean life span of defined strains is also dependent on environmental factors. For example, when the wild-type strain “s”, a strain most thoroughly investigated by different research groups, is grown on rich
medium (e.g., cornmeal medium), the mean life span is 25 days, whereas on PASM, a specific synthetic medium, it is much shorter (14 days). Life spans of different wild-type isolates differ from each other, demonstrating that there is a genetic basis of aging, which is further demonstrated by a modification of the strain-specific life span of a given wild-type strain by mutations. Both mutations resulting in a life span reduction and an extension are known. In fact, when compared with animal models such as Caenorhabditis elegans or Drosophila melanogaster in which life span extension is mainly rather moderate, some mutants of P. anserina were demonstrated to display a spectacular life span extension of several 100% to several 1,000% compared with the wild-type. Some mutants even seem to have acquired immortality (Table 4.1). The characterization of such long-lived mutants proved to be very helpful to elucidate the molecular network governing aging and life span in this experimentally tractable aging model, and it provided data that can be translated, although not “one-to-one,” to higher systems, including humans. Such analyses can efficiently be performed, because the fungus is easy to cultivate under laboratory conditions, and it is well accessible to genetic and molecular techniques. In the past several years, the availability of the complete

---

**Fig. 4.1** Propagation and senescence of the filamentous ascomycete P. anserina. (Left) Fruiting bodies, termed perithecia, contain the products of sexual reproduction, the ascospores. After germination of an ascospore (middle) a mycelium is formed. Juvenile mycelia are characterized by aerial hyphae and regular growth. In the senescent stage, pigmentation increases and formation of aerial hyphae is strongly reduced. Mycelial tips swell and burst. Eventually, the mycelium stops growth completely and dies (right)
Table 4.1  Identified longevity genes and extrachromosomal mutants of the filamentous ascomycete *P. anserina*. “mat” denotes the mating type of homokaryotic isolates. BMM is a complex medium, whereas M2 and PASM are synthetic media. The mean life span of wild-type isolates on the corresponding type of medium was set to 100%.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Nuclear gene</th>
<th>Condition</th>
<th>Pathway</th>
<th>Mean life span</th>
<th>Medium</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><em>PaAmid1</em></td>
<td>Knockout</td>
<td>Apoptosis</td>
<td>+59%</td>
<td>BMM</td>
<td>[49]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>PaCox5</em></td>
<td>Knockout</td>
<td>PaCOX assembly</td>
<td>&gt; +3,000%</td>
<td>M2</td>
<td>[30]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>PaCox17</em></td>
<td>Knockout</td>
<td>PaCOX assembly</td>
<td>&gt; +1,180%</td>
<td>BMM</td>
<td>[29]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>PaCyc1</em></td>
<td>Mutation</td>
<td>Respiratory chain</td>
<td>&gt; +2200%</td>
<td>M2</td>
<td>[50]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>PaDnm1</em></td>
<td>Knockout</td>
<td>Mitochondrial division</td>
<td>+900%</td>
<td>BMM</td>
<td>[41]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>PaeEF1A</em></td>
<td>Mutation</td>
<td>Translation</td>
<td>+218% [mat +]</td>
<td>M2</td>
<td>[51]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>PaGrisea</em></td>
<td>Mutation</td>
<td>Copper homeostasis</td>
<td>+60%</td>
<td>BMM</td>
<td>[52]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>PaMca1</em></td>
<td>Knockout</td>
<td>Apoptosis</td>
<td>+148%</td>
<td>BMM</td>
<td>[49]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>PaMca2</em></td>
<td>Knockout</td>
<td>Apoptosis</td>
<td>+78%</td>
<td>BMM</td>
<td>[49]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>PaMth1</em></td>
<td>Overexpression</td>
<td>Unknown</td>
<td>+115%</td>
<td>PASM</td>
<td>[53]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>PaTom70</em></td>
<td>Mutation</td>
<td>Protein import into mitochondria [mat −]</td>
<td>&gt; +2,700%</td>
<td>M2</td>
<td>[54]</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Extrachromosomal mutants

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Mutant</th>
<th>Condition</th>
<th>Pathway</th>
<th>Mean life span</th>
<th>Medium</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>AL2-1</td>
<td>Insertion of pAL2-1 into mtDNA</td>
<td>Respiratory chain</td>
<td>+1,360%</td>
<td>BMM</td>
<td>[55]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ex1</td>
<td><em>PaCox1</em> deletion (complete)</td>
<td>Respiratory chain</td>
<td>Immortal</td>
<td>M2</td>
<td>[18]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ex2</td>
<td><em>PaCox1</em> deletion (complete)</td>
<td>Respiratory chain</td>
<td>Immortal</td>
<td>M2</td>
<td>[31]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mex1</td>
<td>Deletion in <em>PaCox1</em> (first exon-intron transition)</td>
<td>Respiratory chain</td>
<td>Immortal</td>
<td>M2</td>
<td>[32]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mex5</td>
<td>Deletion in <em>PaCox1</em> (first exon-intron transition)</td>
<td>Respiratory chain</td>
<td>Immortal</td>
<td>M2</td>
<td>[32]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mex7</td>
<td>Deletion in <em>PaCox1</em> (first exon-intron transition)</td>
<td>Respiratory chain</td>
<td>Immortal</td>
<td>M2</td>
<td>[32]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mex16</td>
<td>Deletion in <em>PaCox1</em> (first exon-intron transition)</td>
<td>Respiratory chain</td>
<td>Immortal</td>
<td>M2</td>
<td>[33]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mid26</td>
<td><em>PaCox1</em> deletion (pl-Intron)</td>
<td>Respiratory chain</td>
<td>+100%</td>
<td>M2</td>
<td>[56]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wa32-LL</td>
<td>Impairment of <em>PaNd2</em> and <em>PaNd3</em> expression</td>
<td>Respiratory chain</td>
<td>&gt; +750%</td>
<td>M2</td>
<td>[57]</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Genomic sequence and the establishment of effective techniques to construct transgenic and “knockout” strains in a reasonable time [7] provided important prerequisites for an efficient experimental use of the system.
Here, we summarize data related to several aspects of aging in *P. anserina* that are specifically linked to a role of reactive oxygen species (ROS). We provide a view that is emerging from recent investigations. There are several reviews [1-4, 8–11] that provide a summary of earlier investigations about this experimental aging model.

2 Mitochondrial DNA Instabilities

One of the first important molecular pathways affecting the life span of *P. anserina* was reported in the late 1970s and subsequently studied in more detail in the early 1980s. At that time, it was found that aging of all cultures isolated from the wild from different locations in Europe was characterized by instabilities of the standard mitochondrial DNA (mtDNA). One of the early hallmarks in aging cultures was found to be the accumulation of a circular DNA molecule, which, due to its physical characteristics was termed “plasmid-like” DNA (plDNA) [12] and due to the accumulation in senescent cultures as αsenDNA [13]. This autonomous DNA element was demonstrated to be derived from the first intron (pl-intron or intron α) of the gene coding for cytochrome *c* oxidase subunit I (COXI) [14]. In juvenile cultures, this piece of DNA is predominantly integrated into the *CoxI* gene. During aging, it becomes liberated and amplified [12, 15, 16]. It was shown that plDNA causes mtDNA instabilities due to its ability to reintegrate into the mtDNA. This leads to plDNA duplications, allowing efficient DNA recombination and rearrangement [17]. In senescent cultures, the standard mtDNA is almost quantitatively rearranged [16, 18]. As a consequence, the expression of mtDNA-encoded genes, needed for turnover of gene products is progressively impaired. Although for a long time it was believed that aging of *P. anserina* is caused by the age-related liberation and amplification of plDNA, later data demonstrated that this process, at least in laboratory strains, is not the case. This conclusion can be drawn from different mutants that were reported not to contain amplified plDNA in the senescent stage but still stop growth and die [19, 20]. However, because these mutants are strongly affected in vital functions (e.g., growth rate, fertility), it seems that they are unable to survive in nature, and aging in nature most likely is in fact caused by mtDNA instability. Regardless of this unsolved issue, the described mtDNA rearrangements are a hallmark of wild-type strain aging, and they do represent a useful biomarker of aging. Moreover, plDNA amplification clearly acts as a modulator accelerating the pace of aging because stabilization of the mtDNA is a predictable interference to extend life span in *P. anserina*. In nature, mtDNA instability leads to a strong pressure to efficiently reproduce within a very short time.

As mentioned, in the absence of pathways leading to mtDNA reorganization, life span of some *P. anserina* strains is still limited, indicating that other basic pathways with an impact on life span and aging must exist. In the past decades of research, a large body of data accumulated pointing to the impact of oxygenic energy transduction pathways and the generation of ROS.
3 Oxidative Stress

3.1 ROS Generation

The role of ROS in damaging biomolecules, and by doing so, impairing cellular function that leads to the aging of biological systems has been first put forward in the 1950s by D. Harman [21]. Since this time, numerous data have been collected that support the “free radical theory of aging” leading to a refined theory that stresses that the major source of oxidative stress are mitochondria [22]. However, even today the theory is not finally proven, and research is still aimed at challenging this theory.

An important source of ROS is the respiratory chain in the inner membrane of mitochondria, the powerhouse of every eukaryotic cell. During the oxygenic transduction of energy stored in biomolecules, such as lipids or carbon hydrates and the generation of ATP, electrons are transported from reduction equivalents originating from the dissimilation of reduced organic substrates (e.g., NADH + H+) to oxygen as terminal electron acceptor, resulting in the production of water. This process takes place at the inner mitochondrial membrane, and it requires a group of proteins assembled into macromolecular complexes, termed complexes I–IV. During this process, protons are transferred across the inner membrane at three of the complexes, leading to the energization of the membrane. The resulting proton motive force finally leads to the generation of ATP at another supramolecular complex in the inner membrane, complex V or ATP synthase. During transport, electrons can escape the electron transport chain, and they are transferred as single electrons to oxygen, giving rise to the “free radical” superoxide anion. This process occurs at two sides of the respiratory chain, complex I and III [23–25].

The impact of the described processes on life span and aging has been extensively studied in P. anserina because this fungus, in contrast to yeast, which lacks complex I of the respiratory chain [26], respires via a standard respiratory chain, but, in contrast to higher systems, it is able to induce an alternative respiratory pathway [27–30] (Fig. 4.2). This situation is important when complexes of the standard respiratory chain are impaired, and it allows the selection of mutants defective in components of the standard respiratory chain. In other obligate aerobes with no alternative pathways of this kind (e.g., mammals), such mutations are lethal. In fact, in P. anserina, the analysis of a variety of different respiratory chain mutants revealed that such mutants display a long-lived phenotype (Table 4.1). In the past, several long-lived mutants have been generated and characterized, which, for different reasons, are affected in the respiratory chain. One group of mutants was found to be due to mutations in the mtDNA, and their phenotype consequently displays extrachromosomal inheritance. For example, a mutant termed ex1 is now growing for >20 years without any signs of senescence [31]. In this mutant, a large mtDNA region encoding part of the CoxI gene is deleted. Consequently, respiration via the cyanide-sensitive complex IV is not possible. In the mutant, an alternative cyanide-resistant and salicyl hydroxamic acid-sensitive respiratory pathway is induced. Via this pathway, less ROS but also less ATP are generated, apparently
giving rise to lower molecular damage and immortality but also to reduced “fitness.” The mutant is female sterile and grows much slower than the wild-type. Similar mutants with mutations in the mtDNA have been described [32, 33].

Another type of long-lived mutants with impaired mitochondrial electron transport is due to mutations in nuclear genes. These mutations are inherited according to the mendelian rules. As an example, mutant cox5::ble in which the nuclear gene for subunit V of the cytochrome c oxidase has been disrupted is characterized by an extreme life span extension [30]. This mutant, instead of 25 days, lives for >2 years. It does not display the wild-type–specific age-related reorganization of the mtDNA, respires via the alternative respiratory chain, and generates less ROS [30]. Again, also this mutant is characterized by impairments of fitness (e.g., reduced growth rate, reduced fertility).

Apart from mutations directly affecting the expression of genes encoding components of the respiratory chain, there are other mutants that, via more indirect pathways, affect the mitochondrial respiratory chain and that also lead to a switch in the type of respiration. An example of this type of mutant is long-lived mutant grisea, which has been selected in a screen of mutants selected after MMG mutagenesis [34]. The mutant is characterized by a hypopigmentation phenotype: Both ascospores and the mycelium are less pigmented than the wild-type [34–36]. Female fertility is reduced, and the mutant displays a long-life phenotype (60% increased mean life span) [36]. The mutation was found to be a single point mutation in the single intron of the Grisea gene, giving rise to a splice deficiency of the Grisea pre-mRNA [19, 35]. Consequently, the GRISEA protein is absent in the mutant strain. Grisea was found to code for a copper-regulated transcription factor controlling the expression of at least the two genes PaCtr3 and PaSod2 [37, 38]. Whereas PaSod2 encodes a component of the ROS scavenging system (see below), PaCtr3 codes for a high-affinity copper transporter.

![Fig. 4.2 Structure of the respiratory chain in P. anserina mitochondria. Electrons enter the respiratory chain via oxidation of NADH at NADH dehydrogenases (complex I, intermembrane space NADH-DH, matrix NADH-DH) or succinate at complex II, respectively. Ubiquinol (QH₂) can be oxidized by an alternative oxidase (AOX) or complex III. Finally, the electrons are transferred to molecular oxygen either via AOX or via cytochrome c (Cytc) and complex IV. Across the inner mitochondrial membrane, a proton motive force is created by pumping protons at complexes I, III, and IV. This gradient can be utilized by complex V to generate ATP](image-url)
involved in an efficient uptake of copper from the medium. In long-lived mutant grisea, \textit{PaCtr3} is not expressed; therefore, copper uptake is limited to low copper-affinity uptake systems. In the grisea mutant, copper levels are too low to allow an efficient assembly of cytochrome \( c \) oxidase, which is dependent on binding of three copper ions. Consequently, the alternative oxidase is induced and electron transport via this pathway results in a reduced ATP generation and ROS generation [39]. Interestingly, although the mutant was originally reported to have a significantly lower growth rate than the wild-type, subcultivation over the years has led to a strain that, although respiring mainly via the alternative pathway, growth is almost as fast as the wild-type. It is reasonable to assume that a molecular pathway is induced in the mutant compensating the lower ATP generation via the alternative respiration. Such a pathway, however, remains to be demonstrated experimentally.

### 3.2 ROS Scavenging

Biological systems have developed multiple pathways to cope the negative effects of ROS. Among them, enzymatic systems converting superoxide anions to hydrogen peroxide and subsequently to water are substantially studied, and they are reported to affect life span and aging. Moreover, once manifested, damage and impairments may be repaired via specific repair mechanisms, or, if being too severe, compensating pathways may be induced.

In \textit{P. anserina}, the impact of a ROS scavenging system on life span control has been demonstrated in several studies. In particular, the role of superoxide dismutases (SODs), leading to a disproportion of the superoxide anion, has been investigated. There are three SODs encoded in the genome of \textit{P. anserina}. One is the copper/zinc-containing SOD (SOD1), which is active mainly in the cytoplasm but also to some extent in the mitochondrial intermembrane space [27, 37]. Another SOD seems to be a manganese-containing enzyme, which was suggested to be located in the mitochondrial matrix. The expression of this SOD is controlled by transcription factor GRisea [37]. The role of a putative third SOD is currently investigated experimentally. Activity gel assays revealed that two SODs (most likely SOD1 and SOD2) are differentially active in juvenile and senescent strains. During aging of the wild-type, SOD1 activity increases but SOD2 activity decreases [27]. The increase in SOD1 activity seems to result from an increase in copper levels in the cytoplasm of senescent strains (see below). When present, this metal leads to a fast activation of the SOD1 apoprotein, which seems to be constitutively expressed in \textit{P. anserina} [27].

### 4 Retrograde Response

A kind of a retrograde response, a mechanism compensating severe cellular impairments, is the induction of the alternative oxidase (AOX) in strains in which components of the respiratory chain are severely and irreversibly impaired.
This is the case in mutant strains, such as ex1 and cox5::ble in which structural genes coding for components of complex IV are mutated [30, 31]. It is also the case in other mutants in which the assembly of respiratory chain complexes is impaired for other reasons, such as the supply with cofactors [27-29]. Although the induction of the AOX has been demonstrated repeatedly in such mutants, basically nothing is known about signals and regulatory factors involved in this process. In plants, which also encode an alternative oxidase, induction of the corresponding gene was shown to result from ROS signaling. However, this possible pathway remains to be addressed in P. anserina. Because P. anserina also encodes different types of alternative NADH dehydrogenases [39], it will also be interesting to see whether and how these proteins can compensate impairment in the largest complex of the respiratory chain, complex I, which is known to be an important side of superoxide anion generation [23, 24]. Analysis of such a role cannot be performed in other aging models, because these models are not known to contain these kinds of alternative respiratory chain components, or, like yeast, they lack complex I [40].

5 Mitochondrial Dynamics

Recently, a role of mitochondrial morphology and of mitochondrial dynamics on life span and aging could be demonstrated in P. anserina [41]. Mitochondria are known to exist not exclusively as ellipsoid structures, as usually illustrated in textbooks. In contrast, mitochondria are highly dynamic [42, 43]. Individual mitochondria can fuse to form tubular structures and networks of branched filamentous entities [44, 45]. These entities, however, can divide by a process called fission. The extent of fission and fusion, because it is controlled by a complex molecular machinery of proteins, is responsible for the morphology of mitochondria in a given stage [45, 46]. Although the basis of the mechanisms of fission and fusion of mitochondria are currently extensively investigated, only little is known about the impact on aging. Interestingly, it was shown recently in P. anserina that mitochondrial morphology changes during aging from tubular networks in juvenile cultures to punctuate in senescent cultures [41]. PaDnm1, a gene encoding a putative dynamin-related GTPase involved in mitochondrial fission, was identified to be up-regulated in the long-lived mutant grisea. A PaDnm1 knockout strain was found to have an 11-fold increased life span [41]. In the mutant, like in the wild-type, hydrogen peroxide is released in the senescent phase of the life cycle only. Most interestingly and in contrast to many other long-lived strains of P. anserina with a reduced fitness, the PaDnm1 knockout strain is not impaired in growth and fertility. Thus, this strain is characterized by an increased “healthy” period of its life span and an example of healthy aging [41]. Interestingly, although wild-type cultures are found to be sensitive to etoposide, a frequently used inducer of apoptosis, this is not the case in the PaDnm1 knockout strain [41]. This latter finding links mitochondrial dynamics and life span control with apoptotic pathways.
6 Age-Related Changes in Cytoplasmic Copper Levels

During the course of characterization of the copper metabolism in \textit{P. anserina}, it was found that genes such as \textit{PaCtr3} encoding a high-affinity copper transporter, or the metallothionein gene coding for a short cysteine-rich copper binding protein, are differentially expressed during aging of wild-type cultures \cite{38, 47}. Moreover, activity of SOD1, which depends on cytoplasmic availability of copper, increases during aging \cite{27}. These data suggest that during aging, cellular copper levels change in the different cellular compartments. It has been proposed previously that the changes in cytoplasmic copper levels result from release of copper from mitochondria, a view that gained additional support by the finding that the mitochondrial matrix represents a copper reservoir at least in yeast \cite{48}. Because copper, via copper-sensing transcription factors such as GR1SEA, affects gene expression, such a change may have yet unknown consequences (e.g., via the induction or repression of yet unknown genes). It is a challenge to further investigate this issue in \textit{P. anserina} by examining the age-dependent expression of the complete set of copper-regulated genes and by analyzing whether the pathway emerging in \textit{P. anserina} can be translated to other biological systems, including mammals.

7 ROS-Induced Apoptosis

From the investigations with the \textit{PaDnm1} knockout strain, a first experimental set of data supporting the role of apoptosis in life span control in \textit{P. anserina} became available recently \cite{41}. Interestingly, within the genome several putative apoptosis factors are encoded \cite{7, 49}. Both genes encoding components of caspase-dependent and caspase-independent pathways have been identified \cite{7, 49}. In a recent study, the characterization of two cysteine/aspartate proteases with features of so-called metacaspases revealed the first important clues about a role of apoptosis as a final execution program in \textit{P. anserina} \cite{49}. Interestingly, in mutants in which either of the genes encoding metacaspase 1 or 2, respectively, were deleted, an increased life span was observed \cite{49}. Metacaspase activity was measured in wild-type strains of \textit{P. anserina} by using putative synthetic substrates. In addition, the activation of metacaspases via hydrogen peroxide in later stages of life became apparent \cite{49}. Subsequent analysis of the apoptosis machinery in \textit{P. anserina} is in progress and it will certainly provide new clues about the processes bringing life to an end in this aging model.

8 Conclusions and Outlook

In \textit{P. anserina}, a body of experimental data has been generated in the past four decades of research demonstrating the impact of different molecular pathways on life span control and aging (Fig. 4.3). A critical role is played by the very basal
Fig. 4.3  Overview of factors that contribute to *P. anserina* aging. During aging, mtDNA is subject to reorganization and mutation, which leads to an impaired remodeling of the respiratory chain. Severe oxidative damage (*) leads to deficiency of crucial molecular components such as COX of the respiratory chain. ROS scavenging by SODs, degradation of oxidatively modified proteins by mitochondrial LON protease and cytosolic proteasomes as well as the copper-dependent induction of a retrograde response are among components that defend against the deleterious effects of oxidative stress. Mitochondrial dynamics (i.e., fusion and fission) also influences aging and is under control of proteins such as PaDNM1. Additionally, mitochondria seem to play a crucial role in apoptosis induction as a final execution program through the release of proapoptotic factors such as apoptosis-inducing factor (AIF) and AIF-like mitochondrion-associated inducer of death (AMID). The question how DNA damage and repair [e.g., by poly(ADP-ribose)polymerase (PARP)] impacts aging and apoptosis induction is currently under investigation.

process related to energy transduction as they are carried out in mitochondria. *P. anserina*, comparable to higher systems such as humans, is strictly dependent on this function, and it has to deal with the consequences of ROS generated during this central process. From experimental details, important roles of various maintenance and compensation mechanisms can be envisioned. The details of their regulation and their interactions, however, remain to be deciphered in more detail. Also, other yet unexplored pathways (e.g., protein quality control systems, DNA repair) need to be thoroughly investigated. Once these data are available, it will be possible to generate a more holistic view about the aging process at the organismic level. Such
a view will certainly be a good basis for translational research in other more complicated biological systems or in systems that, like humans, are not accessible to the kind of experimentation that is possible in *P. anserina*.

References

5 Oxidative Stress and Aging in the Budding Yeast *Saccharomyces cerevisiae*

Stavros Gonidakis and Valter D. Longo

**Summary** The production of reactive oxygen species is an unavoidable consequence of life in an aerobic environment. The accumulation of macromolecular damage caused by these highly reactive substances is thought to be one of the major contributors to the aging phenotype. Protection against this damage provided by antioxidant enzymes such as superoxide dismutases is critically important for the maintenance of an aging yeast population. The role of superoxide signaling in age-dependent apoptosis suggests that reactive oxygen species are involved in the regulation of multiple maintenance and repair systems during yeast aging. Enhanced protection against oxidative stress seems to be necessary but not sufficient for life span extension in model organisms ranging from yeast to mice.

**Keywords** Yeast, aging, oxidative stress, superoxide, apoptosis.

Although life can be sustained without molecular oxygen, most organisms have been evolving in its presence for the past 2 billion years. Therefore, natural selection has favored several tactics that allow aerobic organisms to consume oxygen while minimizing the damage caused by the toxic by-products of its metabolism. This chapter focuses on the involvement of reactive oxygen species (ROS) in the aging process of the budding yeast *Saccharomyces cerevisiae.*

1 The Model System

The molecular and cellular architecture of *Saccharomyces cerevisiae* shares remarkable similarities with that of higher eukaryotes. The powerful genomic and genetic tools available for its manipulation and its short life span under laboratory conditions make it an exceptionally well-suited model organism for biogerontological research. Unlike other model systems for aging research, where life span is only measured through the survival of an organism or population over time, two different life span paradigms are being used in yeast. Replicative life span measures how...
many “daughter” cells a single “mother” cell incubated onto solid medium can beget. Our lab introduced the survival of a nondondividing population of yeast cells over time (chronological aging) as a method to study yeast aging more akin to the method used in higher organisms [1]. There have been instances where certain genetic manipulations produced opposite effects in the two life span assays [2]. However, the findings that the Ras and Sch9 pathways reduce survival in both paradigms [3] and that passages through stationary phase decrease replicative life span [4] suggest that some overlap exists between the mechanisms regulating aging in the those two different experimental regimes.

A typical chronological aging experiment is initiated by the inoculation of approximately $10^6$ cells in synthetic complete medium containing 2% glucose. During the growth phase (approximately 10 h), energy is produced mainly from the fermentative catabolism of glucose. After exponential growth exhausts most of the extracellular glucose, the population switches from a fermentative to a largely respiratory metabolism by using the ethanol produced during log phase. Slow growth continues until approximately 48 h; the maximum cell density is measured 3 days after the inoculation. The aging population is maintained at 30 °C with shaking and its survival is subsequently followed by removing aliquots at regular time intervals and measuring the number of cells able to form colonies when plated on rich nutrient plates (colony-forming units [CFUs]). We have confirmed that the progressive decline in CFUs over time reflects a reduction in the viability of cells by observing an increase in protein concentration in the culture medium due to the death and lysis of aging cells [5] and also by observing a robust correlation between the number of culturable cells and the number of cells stained with FUN-1, which stains intravacuolar structures only in metabolically active organisms with intact plasma membranes (unpublished data).

The mean life span of wild-type strains grown in synthetic complete medium containing glucose (SDC) varies from 6-7 to 15-20 days, as opposed to yeast grown and incubated in the rich medium (YPD), which survive for longer periods in a low-metabolism stationary phase. Yeast grown in SDC maintain high metabolic rates during most of their life span. There also are data showing the large effect that the carbon source supporting growth can have on the subsequent chronological life span of a yeast population; populations grown on a respiratory carbon source have a longer life span compared with isogenic populations grown on dextrose, a fermentable carbon source [6]. *Saccharomyces cerevisiae* aging chronologically resemble postmitotic cells of multicellular organisms, because they have exited from the cell cycle and most of their energy is produced by mitochondrial respiration. The dependence of stationary phase cells on respiration for their energy production might explain the enhanced survival caused by growth on a respiratory carbon source, which would result in an aging population preadapted to a respiratory metabolism. It is also worth noting that the environment created during a chronological life span experiment in the laboratory resembles the “feast and famine” lifestyle that most microorganisms face in their natural ecological niches.

One of the major criticisms against the use of our experimental paradigm for the study of aging is that the death we observe is starvation- and not age-dependent.
Three observations argue against this possibility: First, stored glycogen and ethanol levels of the wild-type strain DBY746 adjusted for population density are not significantly different between days 3 and 7 of a typical viability experiment (unpublished data); therefore, yeast seem to be maintaining a high concentration of a major reserve carbon source during our aging experiments. Second, removal of all the nutrients present in expired medium and transfer of the population to sterile distilled water on day 3 results in a significant increase in the chronological life span of wild-type strains [7]. Last, adjustment of the pH of a yeast culture from 4.0 to 7.0 during the course of an aging experiment also results in a pronounced increase in the mean life span of the population [7].

2 ROS and Aging: A Lesson from Knockouts

Energy production from mitochondrial respiration with oxygen as the terminal electron acceptor results in the production of highly reactive, damaging substances collectively called ROS. Harman proposed that the time-dependent accumulation of macromolecular damage inflicted by these species is one of the major causes of aging in aerobic organisms [8]. Oxidative damage to cellular macromolecules has been observed during chronological and replicative yeast aging in several studies [9]. The importance of successful oxidative stress management for the maintenance of a healthy yeast life span has been made abundantly clear by the study of mutants lacking one or more antioxidant enzymes. Superoxide dismutases (SODs) hold a prominent position among those enzymes, and considerable effort has been devoted to the study of mutants lacking them in organisms as diverse as Escherichia coli and Mus musculus.

SODs catalyze the disproportionation of superoxide (O$_2^-$) to hydrogen peroxide and water in vivo. Saccharomyces cerevisiae expresses a cytosolic CuZn SOD coded by the SOD1 gene and a Mn SOD localized in the mitochondrial matrix coded by SOD2 [10]. SOD1 accounts for approximately 90% of the total SOD activity in cells growing on glucose [10]. The superoxide-dependent inactivation of the mitochondrial matrix-localized protein homoaconitase (Lys4) in the sod1Δ mutant [11] suggests that Sod1 also can provide protection against superoxide produced in the mitochondrial intermembrane space and diffusing to the mitochondrial matrix. The increase in mitochondrial protein carbonylation observed in sod1Δ provides further support for this notion [12]. Fridovich [13] suggested that the high levels of superoxide in the cytosol and intermembrane space of sod1Δ may react with endogenous nitric oxide, forming peroxynitrite that can diffuse into the mitochondrial matrix and inactivate Lys4 and other proteins.

Knockout strains lacking either of the two SODs exhibit reduced growth rates on respiratory carbon sources, amino acid auxotrophies, and shorter chronological life span. These multiple deficits reveal the importance of protection against oxidative stress under physiologically distinct conditions. Escherichia coli lacking both cytoplasmic SODs is unable to grow in glucose minimal media [14] and dies
early in rich media [15]. The *E. coli* Fe SOD targeted to the mitochondria reverses the growth defect of yeast *sod2Δ* [16], demonstrating the functional conservation of the SODs during evolution. *Saccharomyces cerevisiae* *sod1* and *sod2* knockout (KO) strains have a reduced life span compared with wild type under both normoxic and hypoxic conditions. *Sod1Δ* has a shorter life span than *sod2Δ* in normoxic conditions, but the comparison is reversed in hypoxic conditions, with *sod1Δ* surviving better for the most part of the experiment [17]. These data illustrate the differential protective effect of cytoplasmic and mitochondrial SODs according to oxygen concentration. *Sod1Δ* also has a shorter replicative life span on all carbon sources tested [18].

It is generally accepted that the mitochondrial electron transport chain is the primary source of ROS in eukaryotic aerobes. The contribution of mitochondria-derived ROS in the accelerated demise of SOD-deficient yeast strains is shown by the following observations. First, the early survival of the *sod1Δ* strain is improved by deletion of the gene *COQ3*, which produces an enzyme necessary for the synthesis of ubiquinone [17]. The *coq3Δ* strain cannot make ubiquinone, and it is thus respiration-incompetent. Survival of the *coq3Δsod1Δ* strain can only be followed for the first few days of a typical life span experiment, because respiration is required for entry into stationary phase [17]. Experiments using respiratory inhibitors also support the role of SODs in the elimination of mitochondria-derived superoxide during yeast aging. Sodium cyanide and carbonyl cyanide *p*-trifluoromethoxyphenylhydrazone have been shown to reduce the production of superoxide in isolated mitochondria by blocking electron transport and uncoupling respiration from ATP synthesis, respectively. Addition of either of these substances significantly improves the survival of *sod2Δ* [19]. Conversely, chronological life span decreased in cells treated with antimycin A, a respiratory inhibitor that stimulates mitochondrial ROS generation [20].

Indices of respiratory competence (IRCs) provide a further clue for the role of mitochondrial SOD in the maintenance of aging yeast cells. IRCs are calculated by dividing the number of aging cells able to grow on a nonfermentable carbon source such as glycerol or lactate by the number of cells able to grow by fermenting glucose. This system exploits the ability of *S. cerevisiae* to grow and survive for several days without respiration to assess whether mitochondrial damage precedes damage in the cytosol. As shown in Fig. 5.1, whereas the IRC of the wild-type strain decreases to about 80% by day 7, that of *sod2Δ* decreases progressively to approximately 40% at the same time point [19]. This suggests that a large fraction of *sod2Δ* mutants lose the ability to respire in an age-dependent manner. Importantly, the respiratory incompetence of the Sod2-deficient cells does not seem to be caused by damage to the mitochondrial DNA, because all colonies grown on glucose medium grow well when replica-plated on medium containing a respiratory carbon source. Hence, loss of respiratory competence may be attributed to the accumulation of oxidatively damaged components necessary for efficient mitochondrial function. It is worth noting that the decrease in IRC preceded age-dependent death, suggesting that the loss of mitochondrial functionality is a cause and not a result of the aging process in yeast.
Among the mitochondrial defects caused by the lack of mitochondrial Sod, we observed an age-dependent reduction in the activities of the mitochondrial enzymes aconitase and succinate dehydrogenase. Interestingly, approximately 90% of the aconitase present in extracts from \textit{sod2} cells can be reactivated in vitro by the addition of Fe$^{3+}$ and S$^{2-}$, which facilitate the reconstitution of the enzyme’s Fe-S cluster. The measurement of the portion of the enzymatic activity that can be reactivated by Fe$^{3+}$ and S$^{2-}$ allows the estimation of the superoxide level in vivo [21]. Our results suggest that during yeast chronological aging, mitochondrial SOD prevents the superoxide-dependent release of iron from the 4Fe-4S cluster of aconitase and possibly other Fe-S cluster-containing enzymes.

Defective mitochondrial gene expression caused by a dominant-negative mutation in the \textit{S. cerevisiae} mitochondrial RNA polymerase results in a number of defects shared with the \textit{sod2} strain, namely reduction of respiration, ROS elevation coupled with increased oxidative stress, and reduced chronological life span. Overexpression of either Sod greatly extends the life span of this mutant and enhances its ability to respire [22]. These results suggest the possibility that ROS produced by the mitochondria trigger a vicious circle of mutually amplifying macromolecular damage, misregulated gene expression, and decreased respiratory activity, which contributes to the chronological aging of a yeast population. The free iron released by the disassembly of 4Fe-4S clusters might be involved in the aforementioned loop, because a mutation specifically affecting the iron detoxification capacity of frataxin reduces chronological life span and precludes survival in the absence of Sod1 [23]. Mn SOD homozygous KO mice also showed

---

**Fig. 5.1** Index of respiratory competence of wild type and \textit{sod2} during chronological aging calculated by dividing the number of cells able to grow on a respiratory carbon source (YPLactose or YPGlycerol) by the number of cells growing on a fermentable carbon source (YPDextrose). Figure taken from ref. 19, with permission from Elsevier.
a decrease in the activities of aconitase and succinate dehydrogenase, suffered from dilated cardiomypathy, and died within 10 days of birth [24].

Along with defense against oxidation-induced damage, efficient functioning of the DNA repair machinery also is required for healthy yeast aging; the lack of proteins involved in the repair of oxidative DNA damage shortens chronological life span [25]. Apart from mitochondrial-related pathologies, Fig. 5.2 shows that yeast lacking mitochondrial SOD also show an increase in age-dependent damage to nuclear DNA [19]. This is quantified by measuring the fraction of the aging population that is able to grow in the presence of the toxic arginine analog canavanine (canavanine-resistant mutants arise specifically due to age-dependent mutations in the gene encoding the arginine permease, which are not known to confer any survival advantage during chronological aging) [26]. Because Mn SOD is localized to the mitochondrial matrix, the age-dependent increase in nuclear DNA damage in sod2Δ is hard to explain by using the simplistic view of ROS as agents of unavoidable, stochastic damage. One possibility is that a protonated form of O$_2^-$ or another membrane-permeable ROS is able to reach the nucleus. Alternatively, the escape of superoxide from mitochondria can be made possible by the opening of the permeability transition pore, which has been implicated in yeast apoptosis [27]. A third possible explanation entails the involvement of O$_2^-$ in the regulation of multiple maintenance and repair systems relevant to aging. For example, it is possible that the mitochondrial defects caused in the absence of Mn SOD are communicated to the nucleus via a form of retrograde signaling, causing the down-regulation of DNA repair systems and resulting in the observed increase in the age-dependent nuclear mutation frequency (this scenario is more extensively discussed in Section 3). Conversely, the increased DNA damage of sod1Δ mutants [7] can be explained by a combination of the altered signaling discussed above as and the enhanced damaging effect of superoxide in the absence of the cytosolic dismutase. Notably, the sod1Δ strain ranked among the top 33 mutators in a genome-wide screen for single gene knockouts with increased nuclear mutation frequency [28].

**Fig. 5.2** Age-dependent nuclear mutation frequency of wild type and sod2Δ measured by the number of canavanine-resistant mutants. Figure taken from ref. 19, with permission from Elsevier.
cells devoid of cytoplasmic SODs also have an increased mutation frequency that is reversed by anaerobiosis [29].

Catalases are responsible for the detoxification of hydrogen peroxide, one of the products of the dismutation of superoxide, with the other being water. *Saccharomyces cerevisiae* produces two catalases: one catalase located in the cytosol, catalase T, coded by *CTT1*; and catalase A, coded by *CTA1* and localized to the peroxisomes. The chronological life span of a *ctt1*Δ strain is unaffected [17], suggesting that the toxicity of hydrogen peroxide does not limit the chronological life span of yeast. However, both *ctt1*Δ and *cta1*Δ have a reduced replicative life span when grown on ethanol [30].

The data presented in this section have painted the following picture: mitochondrial and cytoplasmic SODs are important for the maintenance of an aging yeast population by protecting mitochondrial proteins, nuclear DNA, and many other targets against insults by toxic products of oxidative phosphorylation occurring in respiring mitochondria and also by ROS generated in the cytosol. Data from SOD knockout strains of *E. coli*, *S. cerevisiae*, and mice illustrate the crucial protective effect of these enzymes in evolutionarily distant organisms.

3 More Than Just Damage

As surmised in Section 2, ROS do not seem to simply cause damage during yeast aging, much like rust eventually erodes an exposed piece of unprotected metal. ROS have been shown to participate at multiple points in the signaling cascades of physiological and pathological apoptosis in metazoans. The major proapoptotic mammalian protein Bax induces apoptotic cell death in yeast, which was reversed by the expression of the antiapoptotic protein Bcl-2 [31]. Human Bcl-2 has been also shown to reverse the survival defects of SOD-deficient and to delay the death of wild-type yeast [32]. Two recent studies provided support for the intriguing hypothesis that the progressive decline of survivorship observed in aging yeast populations is mediated by a form of programmed cell death.

Herker et al. [33] showed that the viability decline observed during a yeast aging experiment was accompanied by a progressive accumulation of ROS, visualized using the stain dihydorhodamine. They also found that overexpression of YAP1, a transcription factor activated in response to oxidative stress, enhanced the life span of wild-type yeast and decreased the age-dependent accumulation of ROS. The *yap1* deletion strain was also among those with the highest mutation frequencies in the genome-wide screen performed by Huang et al. [28].

The removal of damaged or redundant cells that would otherwise compromise the fitness of the organism provides an obvious explanation for the utility of apoptosis in multicellular organisms. However, it is much harder to attribute an adaptive value to the suicide of a unicellular organism. Our lab provided support for the hypothesis that the superoxide-dependent apoptosis observed during yeast chronological aging is a form of altruistic suicide ensuring the survival of a mutated clone at the expense of the self-sacrificing individuals [7].
We observed that chronologically aging yeast cells display typical molecular markers of apoptosis, such as phosphatidylserine externalization, cytosolic acidification, and chromatin condensation. Most wild-type yeast strains usually exhibit an increase in the number of CFUs after 90–99% of the population has died. This adaptive regrowth is made possible by the release of nutrients from the death and lysis of aged members of the population, and it is reminiscent of the well-studied growth advantage in stationary phase phenotype observed in *E. coli* and other bacteria [34]. We found that the occurrence of this regrowth phenotype was inversely correlated with protection against superoxide-mediated toxicity and that it was associated with increased release of nutrients in the medium and increased nuclear mutation frequency. Whereas regrowth of adapted mutant was observed in 48% of the wild-type populations, regrowth was observed in nearly all experiments with the short-lived *sod1Δ* strain and in none of those with long-lived mutants, including overexpressors of both SODs. Competition experiments between wild-type and *sod1*-deficient cells mixed in a 1:1 ratio are also particularly revealing. Wild-type cells survive better during the first 9 days of the experiment, but they are eventually driven to extinction by the regrowing *sod1Δ* mutants. Conversely, the strain overexpressing the two SODs eventually succumbs in competition experiments with wild type. The competition and regrowth experiments demonstrate the existence of a trade-off at a population level between increased longevity and the ability to generate mutants able to survive and proliferate after most of the population has died. These results are also consistent with the existence of an altruistic aging program that ensures adaptation in the face of changing environmental conditions. Superoxide produced by respiring mitochondria probably acts as a signaling agent for this program, in a way similar to apoptosis in higher eukaryotes. Execution of the program entails an increase in nuclear mutation frequency, and it results in the release of nutrients in the extracellular medium that are used to support the proliferation of mutants that have acquired the mutation(s) that allow them to grow.

Along the lines of superoxide signaling in the regulation of age-dependent yeast apoptosis, a combination of observations invite speculation about the involvement of mitochondrial retrograde (RTG) signaling. Retrograde signaling refers to the molecular machinery that communicates the status of the mitochondria to the nucleus under normal and pathophysiological conditions, bringing about compensatory changes in nuclear gene expression [35]. The RTG pathway affects mitochondrial DNA maintenance through *ACO1*, the gene coding for aconitase. Aconitase was linked to mitochondrial DNA maintenance by two observations; first, it was one of the proteins found to be cross-linked to mitochondrial DNA; and second, the mitochondrial DNA loss phenotype in *aco1Δ* mutants is much more severe than that in any of the other mutants of the tricarboxylic acid (TCA) cycle [36]. Mammalian aconitase also has a function not directly related to its role as a TCA cycle enzyme; it can function as an iron regulatory protein (IRP) by binding to the untranslated region of target mRNAs that encode proteins involved in iron homeostasis. Because aconitase is one of the enzymes shown to be inactivated by superoxide during the aging of both wild-type and SOD-deficient strains, one could envisage a scenario whereby damaged aconitase serves as a signal (through released Fe^{3+} or the product of a reaction involving Fe^{3+}) of mitochondrial damage. This signal is transmitted to
the nucleus via some form of retrograde signaling and causes nuclear gene expression changes that jointly contribute to the execution of apoptotic cell death. These changes might include a downregulation of multiple maintenance and repair systems that would render the cell more vulnerable to oxidation-induced damage to DNA and other cellular macromolecules. It is also possible that yeast mitochondrial aconitase acts directly as a regulator of mitochondrial gene expression in a manner dependent on the oxidation-sensitive status of its Fe-S cluster. The other possibility is that alterations in the Fe-S cluster of aconitase can modify gene expression or RNA/DNA stability in the mitochondria as shown for cytosolic IRPs. The observation of increased age-dependent nuclear DNA damage in sod2Δ is consistent with the scenario presented above.

4 Age-Dependent Oxidative Damage Is Regulated

Since reduced protection against oxidation-induced damage decreases yeast life span, does enhanced protection afford a life span increase? The answer is a qualified yes. A large body of evidence accumulated over the past two decades has revealed the existence of conserved nutrient-sensing signaling pathways regulating longevity in organisms ranging from yeast to mice. The signaling pathways downstream of insulin/insulin-like growth factor are activated during periods of nutrient abundance, and they steer organisms toward a physiological state favoring growth and reproduction. Reduced signaling through these pathways, achieved by genetic interventions, results in extended life span in phylogenetically distant species [37]. Increased longevity correlates with enhanced resistance to thermal and oxidative stress, and it shares several common features with caloric restriction, a manipulation resulting in life span extension in all species thus far tested.

The selection of mutants resistant to heat shock and the superoxide generator paraquat from a transposon-mutagenized yeast library led to the discovery that Sch9 and Ras pathway components, homologs of the mammalian oncogenes Akt and Ras, regulate longevity and stress resistance in yeast [38]. The sch9 strain survives three times as long as wild type. Sod2 mRNA is expressed at higher levels in sch9 compared with wild type on days 5 and 6. Deletion of SOD2 reverses the extended life span of sch9 indicating that the enhanced expression of mitochondrial SOD is required for life span extension in this mutant [5]. Daf2 is the Caenorhabditis elegans ortholog of the mammalian insulin receptor and functions upstream of the yeast Sch9 homologs Akt1/2 [39]. Microarray analyses of gene expression in the long-lived DAF2 KO worm revealed the up-regulation of several genes conferring protection against thermal and oxidative stress, sod3, the C. elegans gene coding for the mitochondrial Mn SOD being one of them. However, deletion of SOD3 did not affect the life span of daf2Δ mutants [40].

Long-lived Sch9 and Ras2Δ mutants are more resistant than wild-type to heat shock, hydrogen peroxide, and menadione (a superoxide producer) treatments. They also show a delay in the age- and superoxide-dependent inactivation of mitochondrial aconitase [38]. The extended life span of Sch9 is also associated with a reduction
in the age-dependent increase in nuclear DNA mutation frequency [7]. One could therefore argue that the enhanced life span of these mutants can be solely attributed to their apparent enhanced protection against the damaging effects of ROS. However, overexpression of both *SOD1* and *SOD2* by means of multicopy plasmids results in a life span extension of about 30% [5], which is far less pronounced than the 3-fold life span extension achieved by mutations in central nutrient-sensing pathways. Cytoplasmic SOD overexpression on its own also is reported to extend chronological life span; overexpression of CCS1, the chaperone responsible for Cu²⁺ loading of Sod1 in vivo, was required for this effect [41]. Another group reported a chronological life span extension caused by an increasing fraction of Sod1 localized to the mitochondrial intermembrane space due to overexpression of CCS1 [12]. Catalase overexpression does not have a life-prolonging effect [5], indicating that it is the toxicity of superoxide, and not hydrogen peroxide that limits the chronological life span of yeast. Mn SOD overexpression has been shown to decrease replicative life span, possibly due to an induced defect in mitochondria segregation from mother to daughter cells [42].

Again, results from *C. elegans* tend to mirror those obtained in yeast: Although *daf-2* mutant worms live approximately 100% longer than wild-type, and they are resistant to thermal and oxidative stress, the role of SOD mimetics in the regulation of worm life span is controversial [43, 44]. Insulin-like growth factor-I receptor heterozygous knockout mice are resistant to the superoxide generator paraquat and live, on average, 25% longer than wild-type [45]. However, ubiquitous overexpression of CuZn SOD in mice also failed to produce a life span extension [46]. Apparently, inactivating mutations of genes involved in central nutrient-sensing pathways are much more effective than overexpression of antioxidant enzymes in extending life. These data suggest that enhanced protection against oxidative stress is necessary but not sufficient for life span extension in the model organisms thus far studied and point toward a more complex interaction between oxidative stress and aging than the theory put forward by Harman in 1956.

5 Conclusions

The relative contribution of oxidative stress in the aging process is one of the fundamental unresolved issues in molecular biogerontology. At this stage, many questions remain to be answered. Do long-lived yeast strains produce less superoxide as they age? Does ROS signaling mediate the age-dependent down-regulation of multiple protection and repair systems? Is mitochondrial retrograde signaling involved in the gene expression changes causing apoptosis during chronological aging? The application of improved analytical techniques in simple model systems such as yeast should reveal deeper mechanistic connections between oxidative stress, longevity, and its regulation. The increased understanding of conserved mechanisms regulating aging in simple organisms also will bring us closer to the lofty goal of a modest extension of human life span by the prevention of a number of age-related diseases.
References

6. Piper PW, Harris NL, MacLean M. Preadaptation to efficient respiratory maintenance is essential both for maximal longevity and the retention of replicative potential in chronologically ageing yeast. Mech Ageing Dev 2006;127(9):733–40.


Summary  The senescent decline that leads inevitably to death in most animal species is accompanied by a massive increase in molecular damage. Yet, the chain of events that initially causes this process, and the determinants of the rate at which it happens, remain poorly understood. For many years, much research on this topic has been guided by an interrelated set of theories that view oxidative damage as a potential primary cause of aging. These theories have framed the construction and interpretation of many studies in the nematode Caenorhabditis elegans. In this chapter, we critically survey these studies. Overall, these investigations have either disproved or, at least, failed to find clear evidence for many of the oxidative damage theories. In particular, they have failed to demonstrate any role of metabolic rate or mitochondrial superoxide (O$_2^-$) in aging. However, they have revealed a powerful influence of mitochondria on the rate of aging in C. elegans. This may or may not have something to do with mitochondrial O$_2^-$ production.

Keywords Caenorhabditis elegans, aging, oxidative stress, molecular damage, metabolism, mitochondria, antioxidant.

1 Introduction

Theories relating oxidative damage to aging, which have been reviewed previously [1, 2] and in Chapter 1 of this book, have motivated a large number of studies using C. elegans. These theories have been linked conceptually to form a theoretical framework (Fig. 6.1A). Briefly, aging is the result of molecular damage. This results in particular from reactions with reactive oxygen species (ROS), such as O$_2^-$ (superoxide) and its derivatives, which is produced mainly as a by-product of the activity of the mitochondrial electron transport chain (ETC). The rate of oxidative metabolism is a determinant of aging, because it affects the rate of production of ROS.

Although this is sometimes represented as a unified theory, it contains a number of distinct and testable propositions that, individually, may or may not be
true (Fig. 6.1B). For example, aging may or may not be caused by molecular damage, and this damage may or may not be caused by ROS. The main source of ROS may or may not be mitochondrial oxidative phosphorylation, and, more broadly, mitochondria may or may not be critical determinants of aging rate. Metabolic rate may or may not affect aging, and any links between metabolic rate and aging may or may not reflect effects on \( \text{O}_2^- \) production. The use of \( \text{C. elegans} \) as an experimental model introduces another dimension to each of these questions, namely, Does the role of any of these factors show evolutionary conservation? As a hypothetical example, \( \text{O}_2^- \) might be a major cause of the damage that underlies aging in mammals, but not in \( \text{C. elegans} \).

In the following discussion, we critically assess each of these questions in turn by examining relevant experimental studies using \( \text{C. elegans} \). There is a rich and complex scientific literature in this field, particularly due to the work of Siegfried Hekimi (McGill University, Canada), Naoaki Ishii (Tokai University, Japan), and Jacques Vanfleteren (Ghent University, Belgium), and their collaborators. Overall, these studies imply that some of the propositions above are true, some are half-truths, and some are false, at least as far as \( \text{C. elegans} \) is concerned.
2 Why Test Theories of Aging in *C. elegans*?

### 2.1 C. elegans as a Model for Studies of Aging

*Caenorhabditis elegans* is a free-living nematode of little economic importance, found in soil rich in organic matter. Experimentally, it has the advantage of being a complex animal, with a nervous system, reproductive system, and alimentary canal, yet one that is so small (adults are ~1.2 mm in length) that it may be handled like a microorganism, with the convenience and low cost that this implies. For studying aging, it has two particular advantages: its life span is very short (usually 2–3 weeks; Fig. 6.2), and there are no inbreeding effects on life span, which have complicated studies of the genetics of aging in *Drosophila* and the mouse. There are also the obvious advantages of an established genetic model system: availability of a well-annotated genome sequence, well-characterised mutations in large numbers of genes, and powerful molecular genetic methodologies. The latter include RNA-mediated interference to knock down gene expression, construction of transgenic animals, and use of fluorescent proteins to visualize gene expression within the transparent body of the nematode. The existence of a well-coordinated community of *C. elegans* researchers has led to the creation of central research resources. For example, information on *C. elegans* is collated into a central Web facility, WormBase ([http://www.wormbase.org](http://www.wormbase.org)), and cooperatively written books on paper [3, 4], and, more recently, freely available online ([http://www.wormbook.org](http://www.wormbook.org)). Experimental resources include strain distribution via the Caenorhabditis Genetics Center ([http://biosci.umn.edu/CGC/CGChomepage.htm](http://biosci.umn.edu/CGC/CGChomepage.htm)), the Fire Lab plasmid vector kit for preparation of transgenic lines (currently distributed commercially by Addgene), and a library of RNA interference (RNAi) feeding clones that includes most of the genes in the *C. elegans* genome [5].

*Fig. 6.2* *C. elegans* life history. This is broadly divisible into embryonic and larval development, reproduction, and senescence. Larval development has four stages of growth (e.g., L1, larval stage 1). Total life span is a mere 3 weeks at 20 °C (*C. elegans* life span is dependent on ambient temperature). Typically, life span measurements represent adult life span only, the mean being approximately 18 days. In contrast, at the L2 stage, larvae can enter an alternative, dormant state known as dauer. Dauer larvae can survive for at least 3 months without food, essentially a fourfold increase in longevity. After exposure to a food source, dauer larvae resume development and subsequently reproduce and senesce as normal.
2.2 Approaches to Testing Oxidation-Related Theories of Aging

The role of oxidative stress in aging in *C. elegans* has been investigated in several different ways. First, correlations between aging and various aspects of oxidative metabolism have been examined. Such studies typically either examine age changes in wild-type nematodes, or differences between wild-type nematodes and mutants with altered rates of aging. Attempts also have been made to test theories of aging more directly by manipulating individual aspects of the relevant biology (e.g., antioxidant defense) and looking at effects on aging. The majority of studies have been of the less informative first type.

One of the strengths of *C. elegans* as a model for studying aging is the ease with which classical genetic approaches may be applied. Many genes have been identified where loss of function due to mutation or RNAi leads to altered life span. A problem with studies of short-lived strains is that a reduction in life span can result either from accelerated aging (progeria) or from pathologies unrelated to normal aging, and it can be difficult to distinguish the two. However, methods have been developed to identify likely instances of progeria [6, 7], and some studies of short-lived mutants have been informative. For example, the gene *mev-1* encodes a subunit of complex II in the electron transport chain (ETC) [8]. Mutation of *mev-1* results in hypersensitivity to oxidative stress, elevated production of mitochondrial ROS, and shortened life-span [9, 10]; for a recent review on *mev-1*, see Ishii et al. [11]. Most studies have focused on mutations that increase life span, such as those affecting the insulin/insulin-like growth factor (IGF)-1 signaling (IIS) pathway, which can more than double the adult life span [12]. For example, long-lived IIS mutants show resistance to oxidative stress and increased levels of the antioxidant enzymes superoxide dismutase (SOD) and catalase [13–15].

Many correlative studies of this type suggest a link between oxidative damage and aging, from which it is sometimes tempting to conclude: there is no smoke without fire, i.e., surely the oxidative damage theory must be true? However, it is not safe to conclude this. As yet, there is no direct evidence demonstrating, for example, control of normal aging in *C. elegans* by superoxide or SOD, or hydrogen peroxide (H\textsubscript{2}O\textsubscript{2}), or catalase. In fact, relatively few studies have been conducted that directly test oxidative damage theories of aging in *C. elegans*. Many more studies of this sort have been conducted in other models. For example, numerous studies of the effects on aging of overexpression of SOD and catalase have been conducted in *Drosophila* [16–18]. Ultimately, it is likely that only by means of such direct testing will theories of aging be verified or falsified in *C. elegans*. In the overview that follows, the evidence for and against each individual oxidation-related theory (Fig. 6.1B) is examined.
3 Is Aging in C. elegans Caused by Molecular Damage?

3.1 Age Increases in Damage to Protein, DNA, and Lipid

As in other organisms, levels of molecular damage increase with age in C. elegans (Fig. 6.1A). Age increases in levels of oxidized (carbonylated) proteins are seen in whole C. elegans extracts [19, 20]. One protein showing large age increases in carbonylation is the yolk protein vitellogenin 6 [21]. Vitellogenins accumulate to high levels during aging in C. elegans [6, 22]. Properties of some C. elegans vitellogenins suggest that they may form part of lipoprotein particles akin to mammalian apoB-dependent low-density lipoprotein (LDL) particles [23]. Oxidation of LDLs by ROS contributes to atherosclerosis in mammals. Together, this suggests distant molecular parallels between protein aging in C. elegans and mammalian atherosclerosis.

Recently, it was discovered that levels of carbonylated proteins increase with age in mitochondria but not the cytoplasm [20] (F. Matthijssens and J. R. Vanfleteren, personal communication). This intriguing result suggests various possibilities: that damage to mitochondria is critical in C. elegans aging, that molecular damage occurs more readily within mitochondria (perhaps due to O$_2^-$), and that damaged proteins are repaired or replaced more efficiently in the cytosol than in mitochondria.

Levels of DNA damage also increase with age in C. elegans. There are age increases in numbers of single-strand DNA breaks [24] and of deletions in mitochondrial DNA [25]. Age changes in other forms of molecular damage such as lipid peroxidation and glycation remain largely unexplored in C. elegans.

3.2 Age Increases in Blue Fluorescence

Accumulation of fluorescent material occurs during aging in a wide range of animal species, including humans. Such age pigment, or lipofuscin, is a complex agglomeration of damaged lipids, proteins, and carbohydrates [26]. Lipofuscin is thought to represent the residuum of damaged molecular matter that the cell is unable to dispose of, which typically accumulates in lysosomes and may contribute to aging [27, 28].

In C. elegans, age increases in fluorescent material also have been observed, either by spectrophotometric assays of nematode extracts [29–32] or whole animals [7] (Fig. 6.3A), or visual examination of animals by using epifluorescence microscopy [6, 33] (Fig. 6.3B–E). The latter approach reveals punctate blue fluorescence, particularly in the intestine (gut granules) (Fig. 6.3C). These puncta are probably secondary lysosomes [34].
The age increase in blue fluorescence could reflect the broader age accumulation of molecular damage and might, in principle, contribute to aging. However, neither of these possibilities stands up well to scrutiny. Although fluorescent gut granules are highly visible even in late larvae and young adults, during early and mid-adult-hood the population mean increases in blue fluorescence are modest [7] (A. Taylor and D. Gems, unpublished). More significantly, if aging nematodes are graded on the basis of impaired locomotion (which reflects declining life expectancy), only the most impaired show increased blue fluorescence (Fig. 6.3A; [7]) (D. Gems, unpublished). Moreover, this increase is not due to increased gut granule fluorescence, but rather to a sudden, large increase in fluorescent material in the pseudocelom of the worm in the days preceding its death (compare Fig. 6.3C and E) (A. Taylor and D. Gems, unpublished). In addition, *Escherichia coli*-fed *C. elegans* maintained in liquid culture, conditions that result in a normal life span, showed only marginal increases in blue fluorescence with age, yet they showed a normal life span [7]. That animals age normally in the absence of substantial increases in blue fluorescence suggests that it contributes little to aging. Another study in liquid culture saw a substantial age increase in blue fluorescence [32], perhaps due to higher food levels used (J. R. Vanfleteren, personal communication).

Together, these findings cast some doubt on the view that age increases in blue fluorescence reflect overall age increases in molecular damage that cause aging. The age increase in blue fluorescence in *C. elegans* may instead be a culture condition-dependent effect reflecting terminal pathology in nematodes as they approach death.
3.3 Molecular Damage in Mutants with Altered Life Span

Studies of whole *C. elegans* homogenates show that *daf-2* and *age-1* mutants (long-lived) accumulate protein carbonyls at a lower rate than wild type, whereas *mev-1* and *daf-16* mutants (short-lived) accumulate them more quickly [19, 35, 36]. Accumulation of protein carbonyls was also slower than wild type in isolated mitochondria from *daf-2(e1370)* animals [37]. *mev-1(kn1)* mutants also show increased levels of DNA damage (8-oxo-7,8-dihydro-2′-deoxyguanosine) and elevated nuclear mutation rate [38]. Thus, there is a clear general correlation between rate of damage accumulation and aging. Mutations which affect life span also affect age increases in blue fluorescence. In long-lived *daf-2* mutants, the age increase is slowed down, whereas in short-lived *daf-16* mutants it is accelerated [6, 7].

3.4 Conclusions

Overall, these findings are consistent with the view that accumulation of molecular damage causes aging. Yet, it remains unclear whether the accumulation of damage is really the cause of aging (i.e., of increased morbidity and mortality rate) or merely a noncausal correlate either of a different sort of damage that is causal, or some other age-associated change. If these or other sorts of damage *are* causal, it is not clear whether they are the primary cause of aging, or downstream, knock-on effects of some unknown primary cause.

4 Do Reactive Oxygen Species Cause Aging in *C. elegans*?

4.1 Alterations of Prooxidant Levels

If aging is caused by ROS, then manipulating ROS levels should affect aging rate. The effects of ambient oxygen concentration on life span and mortality rate have been tested in wild-type and *mev-1* mutant populations (Fig. 6.4A) [39]. In wild-type, these parameters were unaltered in 2, 8, and 40% oxygen relative to 21%. This is a striking result, because it implies either that levels of O$_2^-$ production are unaltered over this range, or that ROS are not a determinant of aging. However, very large changes in O$_2$ concentration can affect aging in wild type. In 1% O$_2$, mean life span was increased by 15% (Fig. 6.4A), and the Gompertz component of mortality was decreased [39]. Whether this effect is mediated by changes in O$_2^-$ production, metabolic rate, or some other factor is unclear. In 60% O$_2$, wild type mean life span was slightly reduced (by 14%) (Fig. 6.4A), perhaps due to increased oxidative damage. In contrast to wild type, in *mev-1* populations there is a direct relationship between oxygen concentration and life span (Fig. 6.4A); the mutation rate in *mev-1* mutants is also hypersensitive to effects of elevated oxygen [38].
Overall, these results suggest that, under normoxic conditions, $O_2^-$ levels determine aging in mev-1 but not wild type. The possibilities that $O_2^-$ does not cause normal aging, whereas elevated $O_2^-$ levels can accelerate aging, are not necessarily contradictory. Aging in both cases may involve molecular damage, but with damage resulting from different causes. Indeed, other observations suggest mechanistic differences between aging in mev-1 and wild type. In otherwise wild-type C. elegans, prevention of apoptosis (programmed cell death) by mutation of ced-3 does not extend life span [6]. Thus, apoptosis does not contribute to normal aging. By contrast, mutation of ced-3 increases life span of mev-1 populations, apparently by preventing $O_2^-$-induced apoptosis [40]. However, this extension is the result of suppression of early mortality, and late-life survival was unchanged. mev-1 mutants also have elevated lactic acid levels, suggesting that lactic acidosis might contribute to their mortality [10].

Direct effects of ROS on C. elegans are most often examined by administration of redox cycling compounds such as juglone, or, more commonly, paraquat (methyl viologen) [14, 41–44], which generate $O_2^-$ in vivo. $O_2^-$ production by redox cyclers can be measured as an increase in cyanide-independent $O_2$ consumption. Although 1 mM paraquat does not detectably increase cyanide-independent $O_2$ consumption by C. elegans [45], 2 mM paraquat does increase it, and this concentration is just sufficient to decrease adult life span [42]. In vivo, redox cyclers receive electrons from NADH or NADPH via the action of diaphorase enzymes, and this activity has been detected in C. elegans [45].
In conclusion, although several treatments predicted to increase intracellular ROS have been shown to reduce life span, it remains unclear whether such effects reflect accelerated aging, or whether effects of ROS limit normal aging.

4.2 Does Elevated ROS Accelerate Age Changes in Molecular Damage?

If ROS causes normal aging, one would expect that experimental elevation of ROS would accelerate age changes in molecular damage seen in normal aging (Fig. 6.1). This prediction has been little explored, although one report described increased blue fluorescence under hyperoxia [33]. Isolated mitochondria from mev-1 animals show elevated levels of \( \text{O}_2^- \) production [10]. Thus, \( \text{O}_2^- \) production might be elevated in vivo and it might account for the shortened life span of mev-1 under normoxia (Fig. 6.4A). The increased levels of protein oxidation in mev-1 animals supports this hypothesis [19, 36]. mev-1 also has been reported to elevate levels of blue fluorescence [33]. However, a recent study saw no such effect either in mev-1 or gas-1 animals [7].

4.3 Antioxidant Defense and Aging

Organismal defenses against oxidative damage include chemical and enzymatic antioxidants. If oxidative damage causes aging, then one might expect a correlation between antioxidant defense and longevity. Moreover, experimental enhancement of antioxidant defense should retard aging. Many studies have tested both of these expectations; yet in each case, establishing a causal role of oxidative damage in aging is difficult. For example, a correlation between level of an antioxidant agent and longevity could be coincidental. If experimentally induced elevation in levels of an antioxidant agent increases life span, the possibility remains that this occurs by some other mechanism than protection against molecular damage. Moreover, if increases in life span are not seen, it remains possible that multiple antioxidant defense mechanisms act in concert to protect against aging or that antioxidant mechanisms act in concert with other prolongevity mechanisms.

A range of genes and processes contribute to protection against oxidative damage [46, 47], any one of which may limit the rate of age accumulation of molecular damage, and its impact on homeostasis and survival. In the first line of defense are enzymes that detoxify primary prooxidant molecules. For example, SODs convert \( \text{O}_2^- \) into \( \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \) [48], and this is converted into water and \( \text{O}_2 \) by catalases and glutathione peroxidases (GPX). Numerous proteins affect ROS production levels, such as metal trafficking proteins. Free metal ions such as \( \text{Fe}^{3+} \) stimulate production of very damaging forms of ROS such as \( \text{OH}^- \), and metallothioneins and ferritins counteract this production. The forms of molecular damage that can occur are extremely
diverse, as are the enzymes that detoxify, repair, or remove damaged moieties. For example, peroxided lipids are targets for numerous glutathione lipid hydroperoxidases and glutathione S-transferases (GSTs). In proteins, oxidation of just the amino acid methionine can be repaired by methionine sulfoxide reductase. Effects of oxidative damage to protein on protein function can, to some extent, be restored by the action of molecular chaperones. Finally, oxidized proteins can be removed by cellular turnover processes such as proteasome-dependent protein degradation and autophagy. Any of these enzymes and processes could, in principle, contribute to longevity assurance.

4.4 SOD and Catalase

The biology of SOD and catalase in *C. elegans* is unusual in several respects. For example, *C. elegans* has more isoforms of these enzymes than higher animals. Instead of one cytosolic Cu/Zn SOD there are two, encoded by *sod-1* and *sod-5* [13, 49, 50], and instead of one mitochondrial Mn SOD there are also two, encoded by *sod-2* and *sod-3* [51–53]. A combination of SOD activity assays in *sod* mutants, and studies of levels of mRNA and reporter expression imply that *sod-1* and *sod-2* are the major isoforms expressed during reproductive development, whereas *sod-3* and *sod-5* are dauer up-regulated isoforms [50, 54, 55] (J. J. McElwee, R. Doonan, and D. Gems, unpublished). Why there should be dauer-specific isoforms is unclear. SOD-2 and SOD-3 Mn SODs have similar specific activities [52], and either SOD-1 or SOD-5 Cu/Zn SOD can rescue the paraquat sensitivity of SOD-deficient yeast [50], which suggests that reproductive and dauer isoforms are not functionally different.

The SOD-1 and SOD-5 Cu/Zn SODs are unusual in other respects. To mature, Cu/Zn SODs must incorporate copper, and in all other eukaryotes, whether animals, fungi, or plants, this requires the copper chaperone of SOD (CCS) protein. Uniquely, *C. elegans* does not possess a CCS, and Cu/Zn SOD maturation does not require it, but instead depends on an unidentified glutathione-dependent pathway [50]. Studies of SOD-1 and SOD-5 expressed in yeast also hint that, in contrast to other eukaryotes, *C. elegans* might not have Cu/Zn SOD in the mitochondrial intermembrane space, although the evidence here is not conclusive [50].

The Cu/Zn SOD encoded by *sod-4* is similar to mammalian extracellular Cu/Zn SODs [56]. However, it is also different in that there are two predicted isoforms, products of alternative splicing of mRNA. SOD4-1 resembles a typical secreted Cu/Zn SOD, but SOD4-2 has an additional C-terminal sequence resembling a transmembrane domain. This suggests that this unique SOD is secreted from the cell, but then it remains tethered at the cell surface [56].

The *C. elegans* genome contains a tandem array of three genes encoding catalases (*ctl-1, ctl-2*, and *ctl-3*; [57]). By contrast, other metazoans have only a single catalase, whereas *Saccharomyces cerevisiae* have a peroxisomal and a cytosolic catalase. CTL-2 is a peroxisomal catalase, and it is responsible for ~80% of total
catalase activity. It also has a lower pH optimum for activity and higher peroxidase activity than mammalian peroxisomal catalases [57–59]. Much of the ctl-1 and ctl-3 gene sequences are 100% identical. Studies of a CTL-1::green fluorescent protein (GFP) fusion protein imply that CTL-1 is a cytosolic catalase [58]. Although this paper was retracted (see below), it was for reasons unrelated to the CTL-1::GFP finding. One possibility is that CTL-1 acts as a cytosolic \( \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \) scavenger because \( C. \text{ elegans} \) lacks an \( \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \)-scavenging glutathione peroxidase [14] (J. R. Vanfleteren, personal communication). A promoter fusion test implies that ctl-3 is expressed in pharyngeal muscle and neurons [57]. More work is needed to confirm and define the cellular localization of CTL-1 and CTL-3. In summary, compared, for example, with humans, \( C. \text{ elegans} \) has a more elaborate armoury of SODs (six) and catalases (three) to detoxify ROS; yet, its life span is a mere few weeks.

Long-lived \( daf-2 \) and \( age-1 \) mutants show age increases in SOD and catalase activity levels, and in resistance to oxidative stress (e.g., paraquat and \( \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \)), increases that are not seen in the wild type [13–15, 54]. Northern blot analysis reveals a large increase in sod-3 mRNA in \( daf-2 \) mutants [54, 60], and microarray studies reveal additional, smaller increases in sod-1 and sod-5 mRNA [61–63]. sod-3 levels are elevated throughout the life course in \( daf-2 \) mutants, even in the developing embryo [54]. Microarray studies also show increases in expression of at least one catalase gene in \( daf-2 \) mutants, but because of the high degree of similarity between ctl gene sequences, one cannot say which gene(s). This also complicates interpretation of RNAi studies [63]. Levels of SOD and catalase also are elevated in \( C. \text{ elegans} \) subjected to dietary restriction, and, in contrast to insulin/IGF-1 signaling mutants, this increase does not depend on \( daf-16 \) [64]. In dauer larvae (Fig. 6.2), levels of SOD activity are four- to fivefold higher than in young adults, and levels of sod-3 mRNA are elevated [13, 54, 65]. Catalase levels also seem to be elevated in dauer larvae [66], although here there is conflicting evidence [13].

It seems likely that the elevated levels of antioxidant enzymes contributes to oxidative stress resistance, at least to some extent, but what about longevity? The effects on aging of manipulations of SOD and catalase levels have been investigated in \( C. \text{ elegans} \), although not as systematically as in \( Drosophila \). RNAi knockdown of expression of sod-3 has been reported to very weakly suppress \( daf-2 \) longevity [63], but, surprisingly, RNAi of sod-5 had the opposite effect [61]. More surprisingly, deletion of sod-2 and sod-3, alone or in combination, has no effect on adult life span (J. J. McElwee and D. Gems, unpublished).

Whereas deletion of ctl-1 (cytosolic catalase) has no effect on life span, deletion of ctl-2 (peroxisomal catalase) shortens life span [57]. The authors interpreted this as progeria, although more evidence would be required to establish this with certainty. ctl-2 mutants show abnormalities in peroxisomal morphology. Surprisingly, protein oxidation (protein carbonyl levels) increases more rapidly with age in wild-type than in ctl-1 or ctl-2 animals [57]. Mutation of ctl-1 was also at one time thought to suppress the longevity of \( daf-2 \) mutants [58], but the study concerned was subsequently retracted [67].

The effects of overexpression of sod genes has not been studied in any detail. Overexpression of a sod-3::gfp fusion protein did not affect life span, but, as the
authors stressed, SOD activity level was not examined in this strain [68]. In one study, it was observed that loss of heat shock factor 1 (HSF-1) suppressed daf-2 mutant longevity without suppressing the elevation in sod-3 expression [69]. This suggests, at least, that elevated sod-3 expression does not increase life span in animals deficient in HSF-1.

Administration of the SOD mimetic salen manganese compounds EUK-8 and EUK-134 to C. elegans results in significant increases in SOD activity levels (e.g., a fivefold increase in mitochondrial SOD activity) and resistance to paraquat [42, 70]. Although one study reported that these compounds also increased life span in C. elegans [71], other workers were unable to reproduce this effect, either in C. elegans [42, 72] or in Drosophila [73] or house flies [74]. Levels of EUK-8 that were optimal for protection against paraquat had no effect on life span. Higher levels of EUK-8 actually shortened life span [42, 72]. These results imply that $\text{O}_2^-$ does not contribute to normal aging in C. elegans (Fig. 6.1B).

4.5 Other Antioxidant Defenses

If studies of SOD and catalase in C. elegans aging are somewhat fragmented, the role of other antioxidant defense processes is a surface that has barely been scratched. In one study glutathione peroxidase (GPX) activity was not detected in C. elegans by using either tert-butyl hydroperoxide [14] or $\text{H}_2\text{O}_2$ (J. R. Vanfleteren, personal communication). However, the C. elegans genome contains a number of GPX-like proteins (e.g., C11E4.2, F26E4.12, F55A3.5, R03G5.5, R05H10.5, T09A12.2, and Y94H6A.4); possibly some or all of these are lipid hydroperoxidases.

There are hints of a possible role of metal trafficking proteins in longevity assurance. Exogenous iron shortens life span in C. elegans [75], and daf-2 and age-1 mutants are resistant to heavy metals (e.g., cadmium and copper), and they show elevated expression of mtl-1, which encodes a metallothionein [76]. RNAi of mtl-1 slightly reduces daf-2 mutant longevity [63]. fin-1, which encodes a ferritin heavy chain, is also strongly up-regulated in daf-2 mutants (Table 6.1) [62].

Global changes in gene expression in daf-2 and age-1 mutants have been studied using whole genome DNA microarrays [61–63, 77]. By one estimate, 2,348 genes are up- or down-regulated in daf-2 animals relative to normal-lived daf-16; daf-2 controls: in other words, some 12% of genes in the C. elegans genome [62]. This finding weakens the conclusions of studies showing correlations of expression of individual genes (e.g., sod-3) with IIS mutant longevity. In fact, the number of genes that are regulated by IIS is so high that it is possible to find evidence supporting most theories of aging [78].

One way to lessen the problem of bias in data interpretation is to screen for gene classes overrepresented among differentially expressed genes. One study combined this approach with a comparison of array data from daf-2 mutants (compared with daf-16; daf-2) and dauer larvae (compared with recovered dauer larvae) [55, 62, 78]. The rationale here was that it is likely that daf-2 mutants are long-lived by dint of
misexpressing dauer longevity assurance processes. The few gene classes identified as associated with longevity included three involved in the phase 1, phase 2 biotransformation system (i.e., the xenobiotic metabolism or drug detoxification system). In addition, GSTs were strongly overrepresented among genes up-regulated in \( daf-2 \) mutants, but not dauers. The biotransformation is a complex system of enzymes involved in multiple processes, particularly detoxification and clearance of a wide spectrum of endobiotic and xenobiotic toxins [79].

The comparison of transcript profiles from \( daf-2 \) mutants and dauers implies that the biotransformation system is activated in these long-lived milieus and suggests the possibility that these detoxification processes contribute to longevity [78]. Recently, a comparison of transcript profiles from long-lived IIS mutant \( C. elegans \), \( Drosophila \), and mouse discovered evolutionary conservation in the up-regulation of three classes of biotransformation enzymes (particularly GSTs) and longevity [80].

GSTs are a highly diverse, rapidly evolving enzyme class (there are 51 putative GST-encoding genes in \( C. elegans \)). Among other things, GSTs use glutathione conjugation to detoxify endobiotic and xenobiotic toxins, including the products of

### Table 6.1 Changes in mRNA levels in \( daf-2 \) versus \( daf-16; daf-2 \) of selected genes linked to antioxidant defense

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Gene</th>
<th>Protein</th>
<th>Log-2 FC</th>
<th>( p )</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>sod-1 (C15F1.7)</td>
<td>Cu/Zn superoxide dismutase</td>
<td>0.80</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sod-2 (F10D11.1)</td>
<td>Mn superoxide dismutase</td>
<td>0.37</td>
<td>0.096</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sod-3 (C08A9.1)</td>
<td>Mn superoxide dismutase</td>
<td>4.15</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sod-4 (F55H2.1)</td>
<td>Cu/Zn superoxide dismutase</td>
<td>0.44</td>
<td>0.16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sod-5 (ZK430.3)</td>
<td>Cu/Zn superoxide dismutase</td>
<td>1.66</td>
<td>0.0015</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gst-4 (K08F4.7)</td>
<td>Glutathione S-transferase</td>
<td>1.78</td>
<td>0.00013</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gst-10 (Y45G12C.2)</td>
<td>Glutathione S-transferase</td>
<td>0.76</td>
<td>0.032(^a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C46F11.2</td>
<td>Glutathione reductase</td>
<td>−0.51</td>
<td>0.024</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mtl-1 (K11G9.6)</td>
<td>Metallothionein</td>
<td>3.45</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mtl-2 (T08G5.10)</td>
<td>Metallothionein</td>
<td>−0.80</td>
<td>0.00097</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cnc-1 (ZK652.11)</td>
<td>Copper chaperone</td>
<td>−0.75</td>
<td>0.044</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>F40G9.2</td>
<td>Copper chaperone</td>
<td>−0.29</td>
<td>0.46</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fn-1 (C54F6.14)</td>
<td>Ferritin heavy chain</td>
<td>5.19</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fn-2 (D1037.3)</td>
<td>Ferritin heavy chain</td>
<td>−0.45</td>
<td>0.030</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>F20D6.11</td>
<td>Ferredoxin reductase</td>
<td>0.87</td>
<td>0.0098</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>aco-1 (ZK455.1)</td>
<td>Aconitase/iron-regulatory protein</td>
<td>−0.40</td>
<td>0.24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pcs-1 (F54D5.1)</td>
<td>Phytochelatin synthase</td>
<td>−0.103</td>
<td>0.704</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>trxr-1 (C06G3.7)</td>
<td>Thioredoxin reductase</td>
<td>0.097</td>
<td>0.63</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>trxr-2 (ZK637.10)</td>
<td>Thioredoxin reductase</td>
<td>0.055</td>
<td>0.82</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>F43E2.5</td>
<td>Methionine sulfoxide reductase (MsrA)</td>
<td>−0.49</td>
<td>0.091</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Data derived from mRNA profile analysis by using whole genome microarrays to compare \( daf-2 \) (long-lived, DAF-16 on) with \( daf-16; daf-2 \) (not long lived, DAF-16 off) strains [62]. Values where \( p < 0.01 \) are shown in bold; values where \( 0.001 < p < 0.05 \) are in italics. Note that of the 8/20 genes where \( p < 0.01 \), all but one are up-regulated in \( daf-2 \). \( ctl \) (catalase) genes are not shown because similarity between the genes makes microarray data uninterpretable. However, one or more \( ctl \) gene shows up-regulation in \( daf-2 \) animals.

\(^a\)Up-regulation of \( gst-10 \) in \( daf-2 \) mutants has also been demonstrated in an independent study [84].
oxidative damage [81]. A screen for genes up-regulated upon exposure to the $O_2^-$ generator paraquat identified $gst-4$ [82]. Overexpression of $gst-4$ resulted in increased resistant to paraquat, but not increased life span [83]. However, RNAi of $gst-4$ slightly reduces $daf-2$ mutant longevity [63], and microarray data implies that $gst-4$ expression is increased in $daf-2$ mutants (Table 6.1).

The $gst-10$ gene is also up-regulated in $daf-2$ mutants [84] (Table 6.1). GST-10 protein detoxifies 4-Hydroxy-2-nonenal (HNE), an abundant lipid peroxidation product resulting from oxidative stress [85]. RNAi of $gst-10$ increased sensitivity to HNE toxicity, and it reduced life span in both wild-type and $daf-2$ mutant populations. The effect of $gst-10$ RNAi on $daf-2$ mutant life span has been confirmed by us (D. Weinkove and D. Gems, unpublished). RNAi of $gst-5$, $gst-6$, $gst-8$, or $gst-24$ also increased sensitivity to HNE toxicity, but of these genes only RNAi of $gst-5$ reduced life span [86]. Overexpression in $C. elegans$ of either $gst-10$ or murine $mGsta4$ (which also detoxifies HNE) lead to increased levels of HNE-conjugating activity, increased resistance to oxidative stress (e.g., paraquat and $H_2O_2$) and lowered levels of HNE-protein adducts. Interestingly, overexpression of $gst-10$ or $mGsta4$ increased median life span, by 22 and 13%, respectively [43]. Arguably, this is the most robust proof to date of a role in $C. elegans$ longevity assurance of an enzyme involved in protection against oxidative damage.

Another enzyme contributing to oxidative stress resistance is mitochondrial nicotinamide nucleotide transhydrogenase (NNT). This catalyses the reduction of NADP$^+$ by NADH, providing NADPH for reduction of glutathione within mitochondria. This is important in animal mitochondria, which lack catalase. $H_2O_2$ generated by SOD is usually detoxified instead by mitochondrial GPX. Reduced glutathione in mitochondria is also a substrate for phospholipid hydroperoxidases. In $C. elegans$, $nnt-1$ is widely expressed (e.g., in intestinal, hypodermal, and neuronal cells). Deletion of $nnt-1$ leads to a greatly lowered glutathione (GSH)/glutathione disulfide ratio (58 vs 12 in wild type vs mutant) [44]. The large magnitude of this effect implies that cytosolic as well as mitochondrial GSH pools are affected. This results in increased sensitivity to paraquat but, oddly, not $H_2O_2$, and there is no effect on life span [44].

### 4.6 Noncatalytic Antioxidants

There is a long history of studies of the effects on aging of noncatalytic antioxidants (principally vitamin E), often generating inconclusive findings. Vitamin E studies have used its constituents $\alpha$-tocopherol and tocotrienols, and the $\alpha$-tocopherol derivative $\alpha$-tocopherolquinone ($\alpha$-TQ). An early study found that $\alpha$-tocopherol and $\alpha$-TQ both increase life span of $C. briggsae$ (a sister species to $C. elegans$) by 31% [87]. Similarly, vitamin E increased life span in $C. elegans$ [88]. However, in both studies nematodes were cultured in an axenic medium (i.e., without $E. coli$), which is nutritionally suboptimal; moreover, the effects of vitamin E on life span were exerted during development, not adulthood. Thus, these findings may reflect
a nutritional effect on growth in axenic medium. In another study, vitamin E increased \textit{C. elegans} life span by around 20\%, but it also reduced fecundity and delayed the timing of reproduction [89]. Here, the authors concluded that effects on aging could reflect slight toxicity, which slowed development, growth, and aging. Yet, another study compared the effects of \(a\)-tocopherol and tocotrienols on levels of protein oxidation, resistance to oxidative damage (exerted by ultraviolet B irradiation), and longevity. Although \(a\)-tocopherol had no effect, tocotrienols had a protective effect against damage and stress, and they caused a slight increase in mean but not maximum life span [90]. A more recent report described a single trial where vitamin E increased life span in wild-type (+11\%) but not \textit{mev-1} animals [91]. Overall, and taking into account the tendency to publish only results showing positive effects, these studies provide little persuasive evidence that vitamin E supplementation protects against aging.

### 4.7 Conclusions

Aging in \textit{C. elegans} is accompanied by an accumulation of molecular damage, but why this accumulation occurs is unclear. It is also unclear to what extent this damage is caused by ROS, or \(O_2^-\) in particular. If molecular damage causes aging, it is unclear how important damage caused by \(O_2^-\) is. Arguably, the strongest evidence that \(O_2^-\) does contribute to \textit{C. elegans} aging is that overexpression of HNE-conjugating GSTs can increase longevity, because \(O_2^-\) contributes to HNE formation. The fact that SOD mimetics do not increase life span seems to contradict this; an alternative interpretation is that there exists a proportion of \(O_2^-\) in cells whose level, by some unknown mechanism, is unaffected by increases in levels of SOD activity.

### 5 Do Mitochondria Play a Role in \textit{C. elegans} Aging?

#### 5.1 Does Superoxide Production by Mitochondria Contribute to Aging?

Studies of the source of oxidative damage in the cell have often focused on \(O_2^-\) produced as a by-product of the reduction of \(O_2\) by the mitochondrial ETC. Isolated mitochondria or submitochondrial particles can generate substantial amounts of \(O_2^-\). For example, \(O_2^-\) production by isolated rat liver mitochondria respiring in state 4 accounts for around 1–2\% of oxygen consumed [92]. However, levels of mitochondrial \(O_2^-\) production in vivo are much lower, in the 0.1–0.3\% range [93, 94], and the relevance of mitochondrial \(O_2^-\) to aging remains unclear [95, 96]. In addition, the relative importance of other sources of ROS as contributors to molecular damage
and aging is unknown; ROS, including $\text{O}_2^-$ and $\text{H}_2\text{O}_2$, also are produced in other ways, for example $\text{O}_2^-$ by membrane-associated NADPH oxidase, cytochrome P450 oxidases, and xanthine oxidase. The notion that mitochondrial $\text{O}_2^-$ causes aging remains very much a hypothesis.

5.2 Mitochondria, Superoxide, and Aging in C. elegans

C. elegans mitochondria are similar in many respects to those of higher animals. For example, their mitochondrial DNA is similar in terms of gene content and overall size [97, 98]. However, there are some significant differences (see below) so, as always with C. elegans, once should generalize cautiously. Little is known about levels of mitochondrial $\text{O}_2^-$ production in vivo in C. elegans and whether it contributes to aging. However, isolated C. elegans mitochondria do produce $\text{O}_2^-$ [10].

In mammalian cells, levels of mitochondrial $\text{O}_2^-$ production increase with age, e.g., a 25% increase with age in isolated rat heart mitochondria [96]. One study has reported that there is no age increase in mitochondrial $\text{O}_2^-$ in C. elegans [20]. A second recent study has even reported a decline with age in mitochondrial ROS production (measured as $\text{H}_2\text{O}_2$) [37]. Consistent with this, complex I activity drops by 60% between day 4 and day 12 [20].

As worms age, their rate of oxygen consumption drops dramatically (Fig. 6.4B) [20, 99–101]. For example, a recent study measured a drop in oxygen consumption from $\sim$200 pl/min/worm in early adulthood to $\sim$25 pl/min/worm by 9 days of age [101]. Taken together, these results suggest that in vivo levels of mitochondrial $\text{O}_2^-$ production decrease substantially with age in C. elegans. Thus, the age increase in oxidative damage in C. elegans seems unlikely to be due to increased $\text{O}_2^-$ production later in life.

5.3 Mitochondrial ETC Defects Can Increase or Reduce Life Span

Based on the oxidative damage theory, one might predict that mutations affecting components of the ETC could, in principle, either decrease or increase life span. Abnormalities in electron flow might increase production of $\text{O}_2^-$ and reduce life span; alternatively, overall reduction in electron flow might lower $\text{O}_2^-$ and increase life span. In C. elegans, both effects of disruption of ETC genes on life span have been seen, but any role of $\text{O}_2^-$ in this remains undemonstrated (for review, see [102]).

In several large scale RNAi screens for genes with effects on life span, genes encoding mitochondrial proteins predominated [103–106]. In particular, RNAi of many mitochondrial and nuclear genes encoding proteins of ETC complexes I–V caused substantial increases in life span. RNAi affecting other mitochondrial
proteins, such as mitochondrial carriers, also increased life span. The combination of mitochondrial defects and increased life span is sometimes referred to as the Mit phenotype [107]. In most cases, Mit animals also show delayed development, reductions in body size, fertility, activity level, and feeding rate [103], and abnormalities in mitochondrial morphology [104]. For some genes, Mit animals have normal body size and feeding rates, but increased life span [105], implying that life extension is not causally connected to reduced body size or feeding rate. The loss of a single protein component of the large ETC protein complexes may cause accumulation of unfolded proteins in the mitochondria, and in many cases, Mit animals accumulate the mitochondrial chaperone HSP6 [106, 108]. Mit mutants also have been identified with mutations that either affect ETC genes directly [109, 110] or in the case of lrs-2, indirectly. lrs-2 encodes a unique mitochondrial leucyl-tRNA synthetase, which is required for the expression of the 12 mitochondrially encoded polypeptides. The lrs-2 mutation is predicted to block expression of all twelve of these polypeptides; maternally rescued mutants form small, sterile, long-lived adults [104]. Severe loss of ETC function often causes larval arrest and lethality [104, 110].

By what mechanisms might life span be extended in Mit animals? One interpretation is that it is due to reduced metabolic rate and perhaps also to lowered production of O$_2$$^\cdot$. Several observations are consistent with the first view: in Mit animals, there is usually a reduction in O$_2$ consumption rate [104], and ATP levels can be reduced to as little as 20% of wild type [103]. This might suggest that ATP levels limit the rate of processes that promote aging. However, a challenging study by Dillin et al. [103] suggests that something more complex is occurring. To test the timing of effects of Mit defects on aging, expression of ETC genes was selectively knocked down during larval development or in adulthood. Knockdown in larvae alone increased adult life span [103]. This is perhaps not surprising because mitochondrial number may be programmed during development: in the transition from L4 to adulthood alone there is a sixfold increase in the number of mitochondria [111].

More surprisingly, adult-specific knockdown of ETC gene expression reduced ATP levels but did not increase life span. The authors postulated that there exists in C. elegans a system that registers the rate of respiration during development and adjusts the rate subsequent of aging accordingly [103]. The reason this is quite surprising is that the timing of action of insulin/IGF-1 signaling and dietary restriction are exactly the opposite: during adulthood and not development. This finding warrants further investigation: for example, how does life-long, larva-specific and adult-specific RNAi of ETC genes compare in terms of effects on mitochondrial O$_2$$^\cdot$ production, O$_2$ consumption, mitochondrial number and morphology, and HSP-6 expression?

Life extension in Mit animals is unlikely to involve the insulin/IGF-1 pathway, because knockdown of ETC genes increases life span both in daf-16 and daf-2 mutant animals [103–106]. Life span is also increased by RNAi of several genes encoding glycolytic enzymes such as phosphoglycerate mutase (F57B10.3) [104] and glucose-6-phosphate isomerase (Y87G2A.8) [105], suggesting that glycolysis
somewhat reduces life span. This seems to involve different mechanisms relative to Mit animals, because animals develop normally, body size is not reduced, mitochondria show normal morphology, and the extension in life span requires daf-16 [104, 105].

Coenzyme Q (CoQ, or ubiquinone) plays a major role in the ETC. Production of \( \text{O}_2^- \) by the mitochondrial ETC seems to be largely the result of transfer of electrons from ubisemiquinone to oxygen [2, 92]. Deficiency in CoQ can apparently also increase life span. For example, \( \text{clk-1} \) encodes a mitochondrial protein necessary for the final step in CoQ biosynthesis [112–114, for review, see 115]. Mutation of \( \text{clk-1} \) causes accumulation of the precursor of nematode CoQ, demethoxy-ubiquinone-9 [116], and increased life span [117]. CoQ varies between species in the number of isoprene units in its side chain. \( \text{E. coli} \) have an eight unit side chain (CoQ\(_8\)), \( \text{C. elegans} \) have CoQ\(_9\), and mammals CoQ\(_{10}\). Likewise, if \( \text{C. elegans} \) are fed on \( \text{E. coli} \) lacking CoQ\(_8\), this increases their life span, too [118]. The above-mentioned findings might suggest that lowering CoQ levels reduces flux through the ETC, thereby lowering ROS production and increasing life span (but see below).

In a few cases, mutations affecting ETC proteins lead to a shortening of life span. \( \text{mev-1}(kn1) \) is a point mutation in the gene for succinate dehydrogenase cytochrome \( b \) in complex II, and it causes hypersensitivity to oxidative stress and shortened life span [9]. The mutation compromises electron transfer from succinate to ubiquinone and results in increased electron leakage to oxygen. In wild-type mitochondria, \( \text{O}_2^- \) production results from electron leak at complex I and particularly III [2]. \( \text{mev-1}(kn1) \) disrupts complex II and results in \( \text{O}_2^- \) production from complex II [10]. \( \text{gas-1} \) encodes a subunit of complex I and, like \( \text{mev-1} \), mutation of \( \text{gas-1} \) results in hypersensitivity to oxidative stress and reduced life span under normoxia [119]. Unlike \( \text{mev-1} \), \( \text{gas-1} \) does not increase nuclear mutation rate.

The short life span and sensitivity to prooxidants of \( \text{mev-1} \) animals was first attributed to the fact that SOD levels are half that of wild type [9]. Consistent with this, deletion of \( \text{sod-1} \), the major Cu/Zn SOD in \( \text{C. elegans} \), shortens life span (J. J. McElwee and D. Gems, unpublished). However, although it was reported that \( \text{mev-1} \) life span can be extended by administration of chemical mimetics of SOD [71], a further study was unable to replicate this finding (F. Matthijssens and J. R. Vanfleteren, personal communication).

\( \text{mev-1} \) and \( \text{gas-1} \) are atypical among genetic interventions affecting mitochondria and life span in that they shorten rather than increase life span. Here, it is worth bearing in mind that \( \text{mev-1}(kn1) \) is a reduction-of-function allele, and not a null; RNAi of \( \text{mev-1} \) results in a high level of embryonic lethality [120]. \( \text{mev-1}(kn1) \) reduces activity of the ETC by 80%, but it does not affect succinate dehydrogenase activity [8]. The MEV-1 subunit of complex II contains a binding site for CoQ. Potentially, reduced affinity of CoQ to MEV-1 protein leads to increased mobility of CoQ and electron leak to oxygen. By contrast, in most cases knockdown of expression of genes encoding ETC proteins may simply reduce electron flow and \( \text{O}_2^- \) formation.
Mutational studies have demonstrated that mitochondria can influence aging in *C. elegans*. One interpretation is that this reflects altered electron flux through the ETC and altered $O_2^{•−}$ levels. If this were true, one would expect an accompanying alteration in metabolic rate. Moreover, one would not expect an increase in somatic maintenance mechanisms (e.g., antioxidant defense).

Is it the case that in Mit animals there is reduced electron flux and reduced $O_2^{•−}$ production leading to retarded aging? This question has been extensively investigated in studies of *clk-1* and CoQ. Several findings suggest that the above-mentioned view is an oversimplification. First, if the longevity of *clk-1* mutants were due to an effect of lowered CoQ levels on electron flux, then this strain should have a reduced metabolic rate. In fact, neither metabolic rate nor ATP levels are lower in *clk-1* animals [31, 114, 121], although RNAi of other mitochondrial genes does lower ATP levels [103]. Moreover, succinate-cytochrome c reductase activity is almost normal in *clk-1* mutants, implying that DMCoQ$_9$ (perhaps supplemented with bacterially derived CoQ$_8$) functions as well as CoQ$_9$ [114, 116]. It has been suggested that DMCoQ$_9$ produces less $O_2^{•−}$ than CoQ$_9$ [116], but this has not been tested directly.

What really complicates interpretation of the role of *clk-1* and CoQ in aging is that the reduced (quinol) form of CoQ can act as a lipid-soluble antioxidant that protects against lipid peroxidation [122–124], which is why it is marketed as a human dietary supplement. Consistent with this, CoQ$_{10}$ supplementation increases life span in *C. elegans* in both wild-type and mev-1 animals [91] and also reduces $O_2^{•−}$ production in isolated mitochondria.

Thus, these results seem to conflict with the observation that feeding *C. elegans* with *E. coli* lacking CoQ$_8$ increases their life span [118]. How may these findings be reconciled? One possibility is that different forms of CoQ have different effects on life span. The increases in life span seen by Ishii et al. [91] resulted from supplementation with CoQ$_{10}$ which may somehow promote longevity more than CoQ$_9$; possibly, CoQ$_8$ increases superoxide production more than CoQ$_9$. To explore this, *E. coli* strains were engineered that produce CoQ$_7$, CoQ$_8$, CoQ$_9$, or CoQ$_{10}$. *E. coli* producing CoQ$_9$, or CoQ$_{10}$ partially suppressed the reduced fertility of a weak *clk-1* mutant, but, surprisingly, effects of these *E. coli* strains on life span were not reported [125].

Another possibility is that DMCoQ$_9$ generates less $O_2^{•−}$ than CoQ$_9$ [124]. RNAi of *sod-1* (cytosolic Cu/Zn SOD) and mutation of *sod-4* (putative extracellular Cu/Zn SOD) can partially suppress some *clk-1* mutant phenotypes. This, it has been suggested, may reflect reduced $O_2^{•−}$ production by DMCoQ$_9$, which interferes with signaling pathways in which $O_2^{•−}$ acts as a secondary messenger [23, 115]. However, it seems unlikely that the presence of DMCoQ$_9$ causes increased life span, because mutation of rte-2 suppresses *clk-1* longevity without reducing levels of DMCoQ$_9$ [126].
If Mit longevity reflects a reduction in metabolism and ROS production, one would not expect any associated increase in stress resistance. However, this prediction is not well supported. For many genes encoding mitochondrial genes, long-lived animals subjected to RNAi proved to be resistant to H$_2$O$_2$ and heat stress, although not paraquat [127]. Moreover, mutation of isp-1 in complex III elevates sod-3 expression and increases paraquat resistance [109], and clk-1 mutant animals show resistance to ultraviolet light [128] and increased catalase levels (but reduced SOD activity levels) [31]. This could imply that disruption of mitochondria stimulates stress resistance pathways, perhaps due to increased O$_2^{-}$ production [107]. Consistent with the latter idea, treatment with the drug antimycin A, which blocks complex III, increases O$_2^{-}$ production from isolated C. elegans mitochondria [10], and, interestingly, it seems to increase life span [103], although the effect is not large. Mitochondrial ROS production (measured as H$_2$O$_2$) is also elevated by mutation of daf-2 [37]. There is also evidence that the SKN-1-dependent antioxidant system is activated in clk-1 mutants [107]. Thus, there is mounting evidence that increased mitochondrial O$_2^{-}$ production can contribute to longevity.

5.5 Uncoupling Proteins and Aging in C. elegans

Production of O$_2^{-}$ by mitochondria is predicted to be highest when the ETC is fully reduced, in state 4. Uncoupling proteins (UCPs) or chemical protonophores such as dinitrophenol can uncouple electron transport from ATP synthesis, which increases heat production and lowers O$_2^{-}$ production [129]. A prediction of the oxidative damage theory is that increased uncoupling should reduce ROS production, thereby increasing life span. This has been investigated a little in C. elegans. The worm genome contains a single gene encoding a protein with sequence homology to mammalian UCPs, ucp-4, which is strongly expressed in muscle [130]. Absence of ucp-4 function resulted in increased levels of ATP and cold sensitivity, consistent with function as an uncoupling protein. However, only a very slight increase in mitochondrial membrane potential was seen, and life span was not affected. It also has been suggested that mitochondria from daf-2 mutants have a higher level of coupling, given the lower calorimetric/respirometric ratio and the higher levels of ATP and ROS production [32, 37, 131]. However, it is worth noting that this lowering of the calorimetric/respirometric ratio is not suppressed by mutation of daf-16, which does suppress daf-2 longevity [32, 132]. Thus, one can at least say that this metabolic shift is not enough in itself to increase life span. Further studies seem warranted to establish the effects of mitochondrial uncoupling on aging in C. elegans.

5.6 Conclusions

Various genome-wide screens for genes with effects on aging have all pointed to the importance of mitochondria in aging. Disruption of mitochondrial function usually increases life span in C. elegans, but the mechanisms involved are unknown.
One possibility is that $O_2^-$ production in Mit animals is reduced, but this remains largely unexplored. In principle, reduced ATP production might seem a strong candidate mechanism, potentially linking the Mit phenotype, dietary restriction and rate-of-living effects; for example, ATP feeds growth, including protein synthesis, which promotes aging [133–135]. However, the importance of ATP levels in aging is not experimentally supported (see [103]). One alternative is that disruption of mitochondrial function activates somatic maintenance processes [107].

6 Is Metabolic Rate a Determinant of Aging in *C. elegans*?

6.1 Metabolic Rate and Superoxide Production

Central to many discussions of the rate-of-living theory is the idea that increased metabolic rate will lead to increased production of $O_2^-$, and, consequently, an increased rate of accumulation of molecular damage and of aging [136, 137]. This view has informed many studies of metabolic rate and aging in *C. elegans*, as elsewhere. However, this view is not necessarily correct. At lower rates of metabolism, the inner mitochondrial membrane potential increases, which can increase $O_2^-$ production. As metabolic rate increases, membrane potential and $O_2^-$ production drop [129]. Thus, all else being equal, one might expect life span to increase with increasing metabolic rate.

6.2 Effects of Temperature on Life Span

*C. elegans* do show striking rate-of-living effects insofar as life span is shorter at higher temperatures. For example, median life span of wild-type hermaphrodites is 24 days at 15 °C compared with 16 days at 22.5 °C [138]. This implies that processes whose rate determines the rate of aging occurs faster at higher temperatures; but the identity of these critical processes remain undetermined. To date, studies of rate-of-living effects have focussed on energy metabolism and production of $O_2^-$ by mitochondria. In *C. elegans*, metabolic rate does increase with increasing temperature [139], but a causal role of metabolic rate in determining aging rate has not been demonstrated.

6.3 Metabolic Rate in Long-Lived Nematodes

As a test of the rate-of-living theory, metabolic rate has been measured in long-lived nematodes, including age-1 and daf-2 mutants, clk-1 mutants, and nematodes subjected to various forms of dietary restriction. The instructive power of such tests is
somewhat limited, however, for the following reasons. If metabolic rate were the sole determinant of longevity in *C. elegans*, then one should see a reduction in metabolic rate in long-lived nematodes, although such an observation would give no indication of causality. If long-lived nematodes show no change in metabolic rate, or even a small increase, this does not demonstrate that metabolic rate is not a determinant of aging, because several mechanisms may contribute to mutant longevity.

In general, reductions in metabolic rate in long-lived *C. elegans* have not been detected in insulin/IGF-1 signaling mutants or animals subjected to dietary restriction, but they have been in some strains with mitochondrial defects. In *age-1* and *daf-2* mutants, oxygen consumption rate shows no reduction and even slight increases [32, 100, 131, 140, 141]. Lower levels of heat production and higher levels of ATP also were seen in *daf-2* mutants, which might imply a higher level of mitochondrial coupling in this mutant. Consistent with this, levels of O$_2^-$ production in isolated mitochondria are higher in *daf-2(e1370)* mutants than in wild type [37]. One study reported a decline in metabolic rate in *age-1* and *daf-2* mutants, and concluded that the rate of living theory is supported [139]. This study measured CO$_2$ production, which may explain the discrepancy with other studies (for further discussion of methodological issues in metabolic studies of *C. elegans*, see [140-142]).

The effects of dietary restriction (DR) on metabolic rate in *C. elegans* depends on how DR is exerted. DR by bacterial dilution has no effect on oxygen consumption rate, whereas DR by means of axenic culture or an *eat-2* mutation increases oxygen consumption rate and heat production [143, 144]. Strains with alterations in mitochondrial function vary in terms of metabolic rate. As mentioned, *clk-1* has little effect on metabolic rate [31, 114, 121]. However, metabolic rate was reduced in *isp-1* mutants [109] and animals subjected to RNAi knockdown of several ETC genes [103]. Thus, it is possible that reduced metabolic rate somehow contributes to the increased longevity of long-lived forms of *C. elegans* in some cases. However, the effect of metabolic rate on aging in *C. elegans* really remains unknown.

### 6.4 Differences in Energy Metabolism between *C. elegans* and Vertebrates

One worry when using *C. elegans* as a model organism to investigate links between metabolism and aging is that its metabolism is different in several respects from that of higher animals. For example, *C. elegans* possess the glyoxylate pathway, absent in higher animals, that allows the conversion of acetyl CoA to glucose. Expression of the main glyoxylate enzyme, which has both malate synthase and isocitrate lyase activity, is up-regulated in *daf-2* and *age-1* mutant adults, and in dauer larvae [15, 145]. *Caenorhabditis elegans* also synthesize the disaccharide trehalose, also lacking in higher animals.
Nematodes are also capable of anaerobic respiration using an alternative electron acceptor, rhodoquinone [146], and the malate dismutation pathway [147]. When cultured under anoxic conditions, *C. elegans* excrete lactate, acetate, succinate, and propionate [148]. It has been suggested that such anaerobic respiration might reduce \( \text{O}_2^- \) production levels, thereby increasing life span [149]. Transcript profile studies suggest that this pathway might be up-regulated in dauer larvae and *daf-2* mutants [145, 150]. However, increased anaerobic respiration in *daf-2* mutants would be expected to generate heat, which would increase their calorimetric/respirometric (C/R) ratio. In fact, the C/R ratio is reduced in mutants with reduced insulin/IGF-1 signaling [131].

### 6.5 Conclusions

Rate-of-living effects can occur in *C. elegans*, but the biochemical processes whose rates are so strongly determinative of aging remain unclear. The evidence for the importance of \( \text{O}_2 \) consumption is weak, to say the least. One alternative aging rate-determining process that is affected by temperature is protein synthesis. Several studies have recently shown that reduction of function of a number of genes linked to protein biosynthesis increases life span in *C. elegans* [68, 133–135].

### 7 Overall Conclusions

Tests of the various elements of the metabolic and oxidative damage theories of aging have in many cases failed to support these theories. In particular, there is little clear evidence that metabolic rate is a determinant of aging, although the possibility of effects of metabolic rate on aging have not been excluded. Molecular damage clearly accumulates with age, but it remains uncertain whether this is a primary cause of aging, and the mechanisms that determine the rate of damage accumulation remain unclear.

Trying to draw clear conclusions from work on these topics can sometimes be an exasperating occupation. Clearly, some aspects of the rate-of-living and oxidative damage theories of aging are wrong; yet, others seem to be supported—but usually weakly. It is as if these theories are somewhere near the truth, but not actually there: We are clearly missing something. For example, molecular damage seems to be important in aging; yet, the importance of atmospheric oxygen and \( \text{O}_2^- \) is highly uncertain. Likewise, mitochondria do seem to be important in aging, yet it is not clear that this has anything to do with \( \text{O}_2^- \). Mitochondria play many roles in the cell beyond oxidative phosphorylation and ATP production, including calcium homeostasis, steroid biogenesis, pyrimidine biosynthesis, and fatty acid metabolism. The effects of CoQ on aging are particularly hard to interpret, because it also affects many processes both in mitochondria and elsewhere,
and is Janus faced in its effect on O$_2^-$, acting either as a prooxidant or antioxidant, depending on the cellular context [124].

A potential problem with the use of model organisms to study aging is the possibility that mechanisms of aging may differ across taxa, i.e., involve private rather than public mechanisms [151]. In the context of metabolic theories, there are a number of reasons for being suspicious that private mechanisms may be at play in C. elegans. For example, it is odd that disruption of the electron transport chain usually extends life span instead of causing death, raising a worry that this is a nematode peculiarity; in C. elegans O$_2$ consumption and O$_2^-$ production declines with age; age accumulation of protein oxidation is largely restricted to the mitochondria; and the pattern of age increase of blue fluorescence does seem simply to reflect general age increases in molecular damage.

This survey clearly supports one particular conclusion: That more research in this field is needed. In particular, we need more direct testing of mechanisms by means of reverse genetic approaches, exemplified by the studies by Zimniak and co-workers on the glutathione S-transferase GST-10.

Acknowledgements We are very grateful to J. R. Vanfleteren and F. Matthijssens for communication of unpublished information, and for their careful reading of this review in draft form. Any errors that might remain are the fault of the authors. This work was supported by the European Union and the Wellcome Trust.

References


111. Tsang WY, Lemire BD. Mitochondrial genome content is regulated during nematode development. Biochem Biophys Res Commun 2002;291:8–16.


7
Roles of Oxidative Stress in the Aging Process of Drosophila melanogaster

Robin J. Mockett, Rajindar S. Sohal, and William C. Orr

Summary The oxidative stress hypothesis of aging predicts that progression of the aging process could be retarded and the life spans of animals could be extended by decreases in oxidant production, enhancement of antioxidant defenses, or augmentation of repair capabilities. Some of the results from studies of Drosophila support this idea, but much of the existing evidence seems to be at odds with the most straightforward predictions of the hypothesis. In fact, the most conservative interpretation of the existing studies is that the predictions of the hypothesis need to be revised, in recognition of the physiological roles of oxidant production, the limited access of antioxidants to some sites of oxidant production, and the influence of confounding factors, such as altered rates of metabolism, in studies of life spans in poikilotherms, including Drosophila. Indeed, effects on life span alone do not provide a sufficient basis to infer the efficacy of any experimental treatment on mechanisms of aging in the poikilotherm. Consideration of such issues suggests that despite its wide appeal, further lines of investigation are necessary to verify or falsify the oxidative stress hypothesis.

Keywords Aging, oxidants, free radicals, antioxidants, repair, rate of living theory, Drosophila.

1 Introduction

1.1 The Free Radical/Oxidative Stress Hypothesis of Aging

The key feature of the free radical hypothesis of aging, first proposed by Harman [1], is that oxidative molecular damage arising from the production of free radicals in biological systems is the primary cause of their physiological deterioration, which results in increasing incidence of mortality as a function of time. The oxidative stress hypothesis represents an extension of this theory to include oxidants that do not necessarily contain unpaired electrons, and to emphasize that there is an inherent gap between oxidants and antioxidants [2]. Rather than structural damage alone,
this hypothesis also emphasizes the role of the redox state, with its attendant effects on a broad range of redox-sensitive functions, including cell signaling and gene regulatory mechanisms. The term “nitrosative stress” also has been used to distinguish the effects of reactive nitrogen species from those of reactive oxygen species (ROS). In this chapter, the terms “oxidative stress” and “oxidant” are used to encompass all of the physiologically relevant agents, without restriction based on their electron pairing status or chemical elements responsible for the oxidation.

As stated above, the phrase “oxidative stress” implies that there is an imbalance between the production of oxidants, which cause molecular damage, and antioxidant defenses and repair processes, which either prevent or reverse damage. The existence of an imbalance is inferred from the presence of steady-state amounts of products of reactions between oxidants and various cellular macromolecules, even in young, healthy animals. The hypothesis that oxidative stress increases in aging *Drosophila melanogaster* is supported by observations that the rate of mitochondrial hydrogen peroxide (H$_2$O$_2$) production increases as a function of age [3], and that the redox state becomes more prooxidizing, as indicated by the reduced glutathione (GSH): oxidized glutathione (GSSG) ratio and amount of protein mixed disulfides [4].

The oxidative stress hypothesis of aging gives rise to at least three straightforward predictions, which are amenable to experimental verification: (1) prevention of oxidant production would diminish the accumulation of damage, retard the aging process, and extend the life span of the organism; 2) enhancement of antioxidant levels would result in neutralization of an increased fraction of oxidants, and likewise extend the life span; and 3) enhancement of repair capability should also slow the accumulation of damage and increase longevity. An attractive feature of such experimental approaches, in contrast to studies demonstrating correlations between oxidative stress and longevity, is that, in addition to testing the hypothesis, they also may give rise to interventions to diminish the effects of aging.

The majority of this chapter (see Subsections 3–5) is concerned with the results and interpretation of experiments intended to test the aforementioned three predictions of the hypothesis, with primary emphasis on approaches involving transgenic modifications in the *Drosophila* model system. Subsection 2 identifies several caveats germane to the interpretation of longevity studies in all poikilothermal organisms, and Subsection 1.2., below, raises issues that must be considered regardless of the model system.

### 1.2 Interpretation of Experimental Tests of the Oxidative Stress Hypothesis

A number of factors need to be considered in the interpretation of experimental tests of the oxidative stress hypothesis. For example, a decrease in oxidant production or enhancement of antioxidant levels could be predicted to extend the life spans of animals, but contrary results do not automatically falsify the hypothesis, for the following reasons:
1. Augmentation of the level of an individual antioxidant may not necessarily affect the overall balance between oxidants and antioxidants. Cellular antioxidant defenses are provided by numerous enzymes and nonenzymatic mechanisms, which are often functionally overlapping and interdependent. Consequently, alterations in one or two components of the defense network may not have a significant, physiological impact. Another possibility is that there might be a compensatory down-regulation of expression of some antioxidants in response to the enhancement of others, or of endogenous antioxidants in response to exogenous antioxidant supplementation, as was observed for superoxide dismutase and glutathione in houseflies supplemented with ascorbate or β-carotene [5].

2. Elevation of antioxidant levels may not prevent oxidative damage, particularly when oxidants are produced at inaccessible sites. Such a situation can arise because individual antioxidants are generally restricted either to the aqueous or membrane compartments of the cell, and because enzymatic antioxidants in particular are much bulkier than the oxidants they detoxify. In situations where a potent oxidant acts at its site of generation, as in the metal-catalyzed oxidation of the metal-nucleotide binding pocket of glutamine synthetase [6], an enhancement of bulk antioxidant levels in the cell may not have any meaningful, preventive effect.

A related issue is that oxidants cause a multiplicity of structural modifications in proteins, lipids and nucleic acids, not all of which have equal functional ramifications. For example, the oxidation of several methionine residues in some proteins has no serious effect, whereas additional oxidations lead to enzyme inactivation and degradation [7]. Carbonylation of amino acid residues at sites other than the active site may have no effect on catalytic activity [8]. Additionally, the measurement of various kinds of adducts is complicated by issues such as in vitro oxidation during sample preparation, particularly for DNA [9]. Thus, predicting and determining the specific effects of antioxidant overexpression on levels of oxidative damage can be complex, even if oxidative damage is indeed a causal factor in aging.

3. As is the case in humans, it must be recognized that aging may not be the only cause of death in flies. Aside from accidents, death also may be caused by adverse conditions (e.g., infection, malnourishment, environmental toxins, desiccation, sudden changes in temperature, and somatic mutations in essential genes), which are mechanistically distinct from normal aging. A treatment that simultaneously attenuated the aging process and caused death by an age-independent mechanism would not necessarily increase longevity. Thus, if a purported antiaging treatment does not extend the life span, or even decreases survivorship, then the relevant pathway is excluded as the sole determinant of life span, but not as a contributor or even a primary causal factor in the aging process. For example, if oxidative stress were a causal factor in aging, then a treatment diminishing oxidant production could attenuate oxidative damage that normally leads to death as a result of aging. Simultaneously, the same treatment could cause pathology resulting in death unrelated to the aging process, e.g., it could interfere with cellular signaling pathways mediated by oxidants, or with the immune response to microbial infection. The pathological effects would
mask the anticipated extension of life span resulting from the decreased rate of aging, which could lead to a mistaken conclusion that oxidation was not a causal factor in the aging process. Such possibilities illustrate that identification of the proximate causes of death in insect populations, particularly in the laboratory, is of immediate importance to remove some of the uncertainties surrounding the interpretation of mortality data.

2 Physiological Adaptation

One particular issue, which has a critical bearing on the interpretation of studies involving experimental manipulations of life span, is that various types of organisms differ fundamentally in their capacities to respond to suboptimal conditions, either by becoming relatively inactive (e.g., dormant, torpid, or hibernatory) or by reducing their fecundity, thereby increasing their likelihood of survival until the restoration of conditions conducive to successful reproduction [10]. A counterintuitive effect of these adaptive responses is that adverse conditions can actually increase the length of life. Such conditions could consequently be regarded as beneficial, if longevity were the sole criterion of benefit, whereas an opposite conclusion would be suggested by the fact that they diminish levels of physical, metabolic, and/or reproductive activity.

A related issue is that experimental manipulations of the environment or genotype, which are intended to test various theories of aging by decreasing its rate, may in fact increase the life span by triggering a common adaptive mechanism of resource conservation. Thus, the extension of life span may be accompanied by trade-off effects, which decrease the quality of life. For example, exposure of *Drosophila* to either X-rays or ethidium bromide can extend the life span, but the longer-lived flies have decreased rates of egg production or oxygen consumption, respectively [11, 12]. Consequently, life span prolongation by a particular dietary or genetic modification is not sufficient to establish either the desirability or likely effectiveness of the corresponding treatment as a human antiaging therapy, or to conclude that truly novel (previously unknown) mechanisms of aging have been identified.

The varying capacities of poikilotherms and homeotherms to exhibit adaptive effects, involving decreases in metabolic rate, fertility, or both, cannot be overlooked in any meaningful analysis of mortality data from flies or other poikilothermal organisms used as models of human aging. Failure to do so has the potential to implicate various unrelated biochemical processes in the causation of aging, when in fact such processes are involved only tangentially, as a consequence of their influence on the adaptive response to stress. These conclusions do not invalidate or undercut poikilothermal model systems, which are of great value because of their short life spans, ease of mass culture, and genetic tractability (e.g., accessibility for mutagenesis and transgenesis), and because it is plausible that they do share mechanisms of aging in common with homeotherms. Instead, the presence or absence of trade-offs can be regarded as a criterion to distinguish which among the wide range
of life-extending treatments in poikilotherms are most likely to be conserved in homeotherms, without adverse effects, and which are most likely to reveal fundamental, causal mechanisms of aging.

2.1 The Rate-of-Living Hypothesis

A decrease in the rate of metabolism is among the various manifestations of entry into a quiescent state, which results secondarily in an increased length of life. Although there is no necessary requirement that the lifetime energy expenditure, also referred to as the metabolic potential, should be constant, independent of the genotype or environmental conditions encountered by an organism, such a postulate was integral to early hypotheses about the relationship between rates of aging and metabolism [13]. An inverse relationship between longevity and metabolic rate was initially suggested by Rubner [13], who demonstrated that the lifetime energy expenditure per gram of body weight was roughly the same in several mammalian species. These species differed considerably in their basal metabolic rates and maximum life spans, such that those with faster rates of energy expenditure tended to have shorter life spans. Rubner’s postulate was modified in Pearl’s rate-of-living hypothesis [14], which also proposed that the metabolic potential was comparatively fixed and that the duration of life and rate of metabolism were inversely related. However, Pearl additionally stated that the genetically determined capacity for metabolic activity would not be realized in all environments, and in a notable departure from Rubner’s proposal, the rate-of-living hypothesis referred explicitly and repeatedly to the individual, rather than different genotypes within or between species, suggesting “that duration of life is a function of two variables.

a. The constitution (organization or pattern) of the individuals, genetically determined.
b. The average rate of metabolism or rate of energy expenditure during life.” (see pp. 139–140 in [14]).

Pearl also stated “that the relation between rate of growth and duration of life in the same individual is an inverse one … in general the duration of life varies inversely as the rate of energy expenditure during life.” (see p. 145 in [14]).

2.2 Departures from the Rate-of-Living Model

It is necessary periodically to emphasize [2, 10, 15] that the ideas of Pearl and Rubner are routinely and mistakenly conflated and that the rate-of-living hypothesis concerning the individual organism cannot be disproven by comparisons of metabolic rates amongst widely divergent genera, or even different strains within a single species. Criticisms of the rate-of-living hypothesis are often made on the basis of predictions that are not implicit in the hypothesis, as originally postulated by Pearl.
For example, a recent comparison of basal metabolic rate and maximum life span data across a wide range of taxa convincingly refutes Rubner’s idea, except insofar as it might be applied within some small groups of closely related species [16], but it is a misrepresentation of the hypothesis as stated by Pearl.

Comparisons of metabolic rates among genotypes within a single species or strain are more directly relevant to the predictions of the rate-of-living hypothesis, but not ideal. Strictly speaking, the hypothesis can be tested only in genetically identical organisms exposed to different environmental conditions, within a range normally associated with differences in metabolic rates, but no other physiological effects. The primary experimental problem is that any variation in conditions affecting the rate of metabolism and longevity would be expected to have additional, direct effects on fitness. Thus, the relationship between the metabolic rate and length of life should tend to be inverse, as stated by Pearl, but it should not be expected to fit a hyperbolic equation.

Notwithstanding such caveats, recent comparisons among outbred MF1 mice [17] and recombinant inbred (RI) Drosophila lines under normal conditions of maintenance [18] have shown that rates of oxygen consumption and carbon dioxide production are not always negatively correlated with longevity, and that they may even be positively correlated in mice. Similarly, there was no significant correlation between either oxygen consumption or heat production and survival times of individual wild-type flies from the Dahomey stock, although the life span of this stock is very short [19]. Despite the existence of some genetic heterogeneity among the individual mice and RI lines, and even individual wild-type flies, it is reasonable to conclude from these studies that an inverse relationship with the rate of metabolism is not the sole or primary determinant of longevity in all cases. This conclusion gives rise to three questions: (1) why should metabolic rates and other putative indices of adaptation continue to be measured in poikilotherms with extended life spans; (2) what common mechanisms, other than decreased metabolism, can explain the fact that poikilothermal life spans are extended by a wide range of proximate causes; and (3) what are the ramifications for the oxidative stress hypothesis?

2.3 Ramifications for Longevity Studies in Poikilotherms

The falsification of the postulate of a fixed, realized metabolic potential in widely divergent genotypes has prompted a suggestion that the attention given to metabolic rates in comparative studies of aging seems to be unjustified [16]. Although a decrease in attention to metabolic rates might be tenable for comparative studies among eutherians, a similar approach where experimental manipulations lead to extensions of life span within an otherwise constant genetic background, particularly in poikilothermal model systems, would be a disastrous error. The fact that metabolic rate is not the only variable affecting longevity under all conditions, including physiologically relevant conditions, does not indicate that it is never a factor under any conditions. Indeed, it remains altogether plausible that large differences in rates of
metabolism are not merely a correlate but a causal factor underlying differences in longevity of flies at different temperatures [20], or in cages that permit varying levels of physical activity or flight [15]. The fact that exposure to the potent mutagen, ethidium bromide, extends the life span of Drosophila, and could logically be proposed to slow the rate of aging if its inhibitory effect on oxygen consumption were unknown [12], should be sufficient to demonstrate that poikilothermal life extension must be interpreted in the context of the presence or absence of adaptive responses. The primary value of continued measurements of potential trade-off variables, including fertility, locomotor activity, and flight activity, in addition to metabolic rates, is to distinguish between life-extending manipulations where the pursuit of some other mechanistic basis is more or less likely to be fruitful. As described in Subsection 2.4, the existence of life span variations that could not be explained by offsetting changes in metabolic activity has already led to the identification of putative underlying mechanisms, which might explain some apparent discrepancies between experimental results and the predictions of the oxidative stress hypothesis.

2.4 Ramifications for the Oxidative Stress Hypothesis

The rate-of-living and oxidative stress hypotheses have been linked, because the rate of oxygen consumption was used as an index of the rate of living [20], and because ROS production was assumed to constitute a constant fraction of oxygen consumption, regardless of the rate at which oxygen was consumed [15]. If the latter postulate were true, then evidence supporting or opposing the rate-of-living hypothesis would indirectly support or oppose the oxidative stress hypothesis, in addition to its implications for the interpretation of life span data in general. In fact, the implications of data that conflict with the rate-of-living model depend on the underlying mechanisms. Two plausible mechanisms have been suggested, each of which is compatible with oxidative stress as a causal factor in aging. Both mechanisms are based on the fact that ROS production is not always closely correlated with the rate of oxygen consumption in different genotypes and environments.

1. The “uncoupling to survive” hypothesis recognizes that the fraction of electrons diverted to ROS production is significantly impacted by membrane potential and the rate of electron flow through the electron transport chain [17, 21, 22]. When proton pumping associated with electron transport exceeds the reverse flow of protons across the inner mitochondrial membrane via F_{0}F_{1}-ATPase and adenine nucleotide translocase, the presence of uncoupling proteins permits some dissipation of the membrane potential. Consequently, the flow of electrons (and consumption of oxygen) continues, thereby decreasing the fraction of upstream electron carriers which are in a reduced state capable of univalent reduction of oxygen. As discussed in Subsection 3.2., this theory provides a potential mechanism to attenuate ROS production, thereby permitting a direct test of the oxidative stress hypothesis of aging.
2. The “membrane pacemaker” hypothesis proposes that the extent of membrane lipid oxidation resulting from mitochondrial respiration is dependent upon the proportions of various fatty acyl chains that are present, because the fatty acids differ in their susceptibility to peroxidation [23]. Differences in membrane lipid composition in long- versus short-lived species, and in response to life-extending treatments such as caloric restriction, and possibly decreased insulin signaling, are consistent with the membrane pacemaker hypothesis [23, 24]. Thus, this hypothesis serves not only to uncouple the rate-of-living and oxidative stress hypotheses of aging, but also suggests a common mechanism whereby various, seemingly disparate, treatments can increase longevity. Nevertheless, the extension of this idea to Drosophila is problematic for several reasons. First, it is opposed by the absence (at least in the head) of fatty acids with the highest relative peroxidizability in this short-lived species [25]. Conceivably, the absence of peroxidizable lipids could represent an evolutionary adaptation compensating for high ambient oxygen concentrations in tissues served by the flies’ tracheolar network. Second, houseflies do contain low levels of highly peroxidizable fatty acids, but the total polyunsaturated fatty acid content is higher and life span is longer at 18°C than at 25°C [26]. Third, an additional variable affecting the membrane lipid composition is homeoviscous adaptation, whereby membrane viscosity is maintained by changes in the proportions of saturated and unsaturated fatty acids within a given species acclimated to different temperatures (see pp. 422–436 in [27]). Such variations within species can complicate efforts to correlate differences between species with differences in life span. Finally, the fatty acid composition of membrane lipids in Drosophila heads is strongly influenced by diet [25]. The latter observation could, however, suggest a mechanism whereby diets rich in nutrients other than simple carbohydrates decrease the life span [28].

3 Experimental Manipulations of Oxidant Production

Treatments that increase oxidative stress and diminish life span show the correlation predicted by the oxidative stress hypothesis [29, 30]; however, support of this kind is indirect, because decreased life span is not proof of acceleration of normal aging. In contrast, the limits imposed by normal aging cannot be exceeded without affecting the underlying causes of this process. Thus, the questions whether diminution of oxidant production could be accomplished experimentally, and whether the result would be an extension of life span, were considered for many years to be of crucial importance to the validation of the oxidative stress hypothesis [31].

3.1 Mitochondrial Catalase

An initial strategy to diminish oxidant generation was the ectopic expression of catalase in the mitochondrial matrix, which is a major site of H₂O₂ production [32, 33].
Although catalase is an antioxidant, which eliminates $H_2O_2$ rather than preventing $H_2O_2$ production, the net effect of targeted catalase activity would be to diminish the exposure of extramitochondrial cellular constituents to mitochondrially generated $H_2O_2$, and not merely to increase the level of defense. Indeed, mitochondrial expression of catalase essentially abolished the release of $H_2O_2$ under in vitro conditions. Nevertheless, in *Drosophila*, there was no positive effect on longevity [32], and further augmentation of mitochondrial catalase levels, particularly in the presence of excess Mn superoxide dismutase (SOD), resulted in a substantial (up to 43%) shortening of life span [33]. It is plausible, but unproven, that the effect on life span emerged only beyond levels of catalase sufficient to eliminate $H_2O_2$ production in vitro because of differences between rates of oxidant release by mitochondria in vivo versus in vitro. In either case, the results suggest that a severe disruption of mitochondrial oxidant release has adverse effects in *Drosophila*, which preclude any extension of life span. These results do not rule out the possibility that diminishing oxidant production has a beneficial effect on the aging process, which is masked by pathological effects on other physiological processes, but they demonstrate that alternative experimental strategies would be needed to reveal the hypothetical relationship between oxidant production and aging.

Although the focus of this chapter is on results obtained in *Drosophila*, a similar experiment in transgenic mice should be mentioned, because it seemed initially to demonstrate a difference between the species. Ectopic expression of catalase in the mitochondria of two founder lines was reported to extend the median life span by 17–21%, although the effect was diminished in a > 99% B6 background [34]. A difference between flies and mice could arise from tissue-specific enhancement of catalase activity, but the same group indicated recently that the original results may not be reproducible [35]. Until this issue is resolved, any attempt to explain the apparent differences between species will be premature.

### 3.2 Uncoupling Proteins (UCPs)

The negative effect of mitochondrial catalase expression on the life span of *Drosophila*, in conjunction with the multiplicity of effects of oxidants on gene expression [36], suggests that a moderate decrease in oxidant production may be more likely to have a net positive effect than a complete abolition of $H_2O_2$ release. This idea, along with the “uncoupling to survive” hypothesis, was supported by the effects of targeted expression of human UCP 2 (hUCP2) in the neurons of adult *Drosophila*. hUCP2 expression increased mitochondrial state 4 respiration in fly heads, but decreased $H_2O_2$ production by approximately 40% and extended the median life span of female flies by 28% [37]. The effect on male life span was less consistent, and there was no effect on maximum life span; however, the effect on median life span was not offset by any decrease in fecundity or locomotor activity. Additionally, the accumulation of 4-hydroxy-2-nonenal, a marker of peroxidative damage, was decreased by 32% in middle-aged flies.
These results seem to support the hypothesis that oxidative stress is a causal factor in the aging process of flies, and they suggest that this process can be attenuated by decreasing the rate of oxidant production. The same study also indicated limits to the scope of life span extension by this method: ubiquitous expression of hUCP2 was lethal during development, and hUCP2 expression in muscle had no positive effect on life span, suggesting (1) that a decrease but not complete abolition of oxidant production is beneficial, and (2) that the rate of aging is most strongly influenced by oxidant production in the nervous system. However, it should be noted that the life spans of mice overexpressing UCP2 exclusively in hypocretin neurons also were extended, and this effect was accompanied by an elevation of local temperature and decrease in core body temperature [38]. The tissue-specific effect of UCP2 overexpression on temperature, and the inverse relationship between temperature and metabolic rate in Drosophila, suggest that measurements of whole-fly respiration and mitochondrial respiration outside the head will be necessary to establish the mechanism by which hUCP2 expression extends the life span of flies.

### 3.3 Iron Metabolism

Loosely-bound transition metals, particularly iron, have long been recognized as a potent source of ROS as a result of their catalysis of hydroxyl free radical production via the Fenton reaction [39]. The total iron content of flies is known to increase as a function of age, and supplementation with dietary tea extracts both inhibited the accumulation of iron and prolonged the life span of flies [40]. A plausible hypothesis for future investigation is that maintenance of iron stores at young adult levels would not interfere with oxidant production required for various physiological processes, but it would forestall surplus oxidant production and slow the accumulation of damage. Ideally, the hypothesis would be tested by supplementation with an iron chelator, or overexpression of an iron-binding protein, such as ferritin, with more precisely defined properties than tea extracts. An investigation of the normal tissue distribution and sequestration status of the accumulated iron in aging flies also would be necessary, to target a chelator or overexpressed protein with the appropriate spatial and temporal pattern to avoid iron deficiency.

### 3.4 Cytochrome c Oxidase (COX)

An additional mechanism for the attenuation of ROS generation, without disrupting basal levels required for signaling, is suggested by the finding that COX, the terminal oxidoreductase of the mitochondrial electron transport chain, exhibits an age-associated decline in activity in Drosophila [41]. There was no similar decline in the activities of other mitochondrial oxidoreductases, but there was a decline in state 3 and uncoupled respiration rates. Prevention or reversal of the decline in COX activity would therefore be predicted to relieve a bottleneck impeding the flow of electrons,
and consequently to ameliorate the decline in energy production. By decreasing the fraction of upstream electron carriers in a reduced state, an enhancement of COX activity in aging flies would be expected additionally to attenuate the age-associated increase in univalent oxygen reduction leading to oxidative stress. Studies in HeLa cells have shown that a specific increase in the abundance of one regulatory subunit, COX Vb, is associated with an increase in COX enzymatic activity, decrease in ROS production, and enhanced resistance to hyperoxia [42]. These findings raise the possibility that the age-related decline in COX activity and increase in mitochondrial oxidant production in *Drosophila* could be attenuated by the over-expression of one or a few COX subunits, thus providing a direct test of the oxidative stress hypothesis of aging.

### 4 Overexpression of Antioxidants

The relationship between aging and perturbations of antioxidant activities has been examined more extensively than the corresponding relationships involving either oxidant production or repair processes. This situation reflects the relative ease of antioxidant supplementation, because correlations between antioxidant levels, aging and the maximum life spans of different genotypes (within or among species) are weaker than the correlations involving oxidant production, oxidative damage, and repair [31].

#### 4.1 Nonenzymatic Antioxidants

Dietary supplementation with nonenzymatic antioxidants has sometimes been reported to increase survivorship in *Drosophila*, but the effects were small in magnitude [43] and/or accompanied by a decreased metabolic rate [44], or they were irreproducible ([45], R. S. Sohal, unpublished results), or they were observed only in relatively short-lived backgrounds [46, 47]. In some cases, the life span was not extended [48]. In other cases, metabolic rates and fertility were not measured [49, 50]. There are no clear examples in *Drosophila* of an antioxidant, or indeed of any other compound administered in the diet, which substantially extended mean/median life span beyond levels normally observed in robust control populations (typically 50–75 days at 25 °C [14, 48, 51–53]), and for which both of the most obvious trade-off mechanisms, involving metabolism and reproduction, were ruled out.

#### 4.2 Enzymatic Antioxidants

The majority of the work on antioxidative enzymes has been reviewed elsewhere, from several different perspectives [10, 54–56], and it is only summarized here. In general, the complete absence of SODs or catalase has severe, adverse effects [57,
but dramatic decreases in activity short of a bona fide null condition are well tolerated [59, 60]. Conversely, overexpressions of Cu-Zn and Mn SODs, catalase, and thioredoxin reductase in the native patterns had no positive effect on life span in long-lived genetic backgrounds [61–64]. Likewise, overexpressing various combinations of these enzymes had no beneficial effect [52].

Overexpression of Cu-Zn SOD has been reported to extend the life span of Drosophila, either (1) in combination with catalase in the native pattern [65], (2) in a spatially restricted pattern in motor neurons [66], (3) in a temporally restricted, inducible manner in adult flies [51], or (4) in adult flies in combination with Mn SOD [67], which had been reported to extend life span in its own right [68]. The conclusions of these studies were, however, undercut by, respectively: (1) insufficient control sample sizes and irreproducibility [52, 55]; (2) limited reproducibility in long-lived, wild-caught genetic backgrounds [53]; (3) lack of reproducibility in long-lived backgrounds within the same study [51]; and (4) generally short life spans and/or evidence of diminished oxygen consumption in several (but not all) of the genotypes examined. Collectively, the evidence suggests that SOD activity may have a small effect on longevity, mainly in short-lived backgrounds, but it has not as yet been demonstrated that an effect can be observed in a long-lived background, independent of a trade-off mechanism involving respiration, locomotion, or fertility. Additionally, the fact that enhancement of antioxidant activities sometimes increases survival times under severe, experimental oxidative stress, without exhibiting any beneficial effect in the same genotypes under unstressed conditions [32, 33, 63], suggests that the extension of life span in short-lived populations may reflect increased resistance to an unidentified source of stress, rather than an effect on the aging process.

The hypothesis that enhancement of antioxidant levels in the nervous system can retard the aging process was supported by a recent study of glutamate-cysteine ligase (GCL) overexpression [69]. Neuronal overexpression of the catalytic subunit, GCLc, increased mean and maximum life spans up to 50% in a long-lived background (84 vs 56–61 days for driver and responder controls in a GAL4-UAS binary transgenic system). Global overexpression of the modulatory subunit also extended the life span by up to 24%. There was no decrease in oxygen consumption, at least among young adults overexpressing GCLc. Thus, enhancement of the glutathione biosynthetic capacity and possibly superoxide dismutase activity in the nervous system can extend the life span of flies. Furthermore, the superoxide-glutathione sink hypothesis for free radical detoxification [70] leads to a prediction that simultaneous overexpression of both Cu-Zn SOD and GCL in the nervous system could have synergistic effects on life span. The simultaneous overexpression of both subunits of GCL, of additional enzymes affecting the redox state, and of antioxidants restricted to tissues outside the nervous system, are other topics worthy of further investigation.

5 Repair

In general, tests of the effects of reversal of oxidative damage have been less comprehensive, involving fewer repair proteins and pathways, than the corresponding investigations of damage prevention. Given that oxidant production is now recognized
to be physiologically necessary, and that at least some damage is unavoidable under such conditions, the repair or removal of damage by-products should be regarded as an area of high priority for future testing of the oxidative stress hypothesis of aging.

5.1 Methionine Sulfoxide Reductase

Overexpression of a single repair protein, the peptide methionine sulfoxide reductase A (MSRA), had the most pronounced positive effect on life span so far reported for a single enzyme associated with oxidative stress [71]. MSRA overexpression in the nervous system increased the median life span by 56–73% in female *Drosophila* and by 60–83% in male flies. A similar result was obtained when MSRA was overexpressed globally, and a smaller extension of life span was observed in flies overexpressing MSRA primarily in the eye. Although the control life spans in the majority of these experiments were not particularly long (typically 35–50 days), the life span was extended in some cases beyond levels normally observed in *Drosophila* at 25 °C (95 days in females overexpressing MSRA in the nervous system vs 55–61 days for the control flies). Metabolic rates were not measured in these flies, but physical activity and reproductive output were consistently greater in the MSRA overexpressors throughout most of the adult life span. Testing the effects of MSRA overexpression in longer-lived, isogenic backgrounds would be necessary to establish reproducibility, but the existing results do support the hypothesis that oxidative stress is a causal factor in the aging process of *Drosophila*.

5.2 Protein Carboxyl Methyltransferase (PCMT)

In addition to MSRA, overexpression of PCMT, the first enzyme in another protein repair pathway, has been reported to extend the life span of flies [72]. Ubiquitous overexpression of PCMT increased survivorship at 29 °C, indicating that modified protein isoaspartyl residues, the substrate of PCMT, may limit survival under conditions of thermal stress. Overexpression of PCMT did not extend the life span at 25 °C, suggesting that an increased capacity to repair this substrate does not postpone the aging process under unstressed conditions.

5.3 Small Heat Shock Proteins (Hsp22)

An alternative strategy for the prevention or repair of damage is the overexpression of Hsp, which are normally induced by conditions associated with protein damage, such as thermal or oxidative stress and aging [73]. Hsp22, a small mitochondrial heat shock protein, was overexpressed in long-lived *Drosophila* backgrounds by two independent groups, with strikingly divergent results. Morrow et al. [74] detected
a 32% increase in mean life span, resulting from either ubiquitous or motor neuron specific overexpression of Hsp22 with the GAL4-UAS expression system. The control life spans were at least 60 days in each case, and flies overexpressing Hsp22 in motor neurons had a mean life span of 90 days [74]. Locomotor activity and resistance to experimental oxidative stress were increased, but there were no measurements of metabolic rates or fertility. In contrast, Bhole et al. [73] reported that ubiquitous Hsp22 overexpression using the “tet-on” system either decreased or had no significant effect on survivorship at 25 or 29°C, and resistance to experimental oxidative stress was also diminished. The control life spans at 25°C were ~60–80 days, but there were no measurements of metabolic rates or fertility. The reasons for these divergent results are unknown, but they could involve differences in the magnitude, timing or tissue specificity of Hsp22 overexpression with the GAL4-UAS vs tet-on system [73].

6 Conclusions (Perspective)

Several main points have been emphasized in this chapter. First, poikilothermal animals constitute valuable model systems in which to test various hypotheses of aging, but careful consideration should be given to the substantial physiological differences between poikilotherms and homeotherms. To avoid potentially erroneous interpretations, extrapolations, and predictions of effects in higher animals, it is essential to test for decreases in metabolic, reproductive, or locomotor activity, and other measures of fitness, which might underlie extensions of life span in simple model organisms. Second, although the oxidative stress hypothesis of aging gives rise to straightforward predictions, organismal physiology is sufficiently complex that the actual effects of a single experimental manipulation may be difficult to predict. Consequently, the hypothesis cannot be verified or falsified conclusively based on any single line of investigation. Third, experimental decreases in rates of in vivo oxidant production, such as those induced by mitochondrial catalase, which had been predicted to provide the most convincing evidence for or against this hypothesis, have in fact met with rather limited success, for reasons which are independent of the relationship between oxidative stress and aging. Specifically, the physiological roles of oxidants may be disrupted by preventing oxidant production, so that any beneficial effect on the aging process is limited or completely masked by unrelated, adverse effects. Fourth, enhancement of antioxidant defenses, which has been the most widely used approach to test the oxidative stress hypothesis and prevent age-related oxidative damage, has had little or no positive effect on the life span of Drosophila in most studies, especially when long-lived strains were examined. To date, the most notable beneficial effects in a long-lived background have been elicited by neuronal overexpression of GCLc, underscoring the importance of maintaining glutathione levels. Fifth, where beneficial effects on life span have been observed, they have tended to implicate the nervous system as a site particularly vulnerable to oxidative stress. Finally, overexpression studies involving repair
enzymes have yielded some evidence in support of the oxidative stress hypothesis, but more extensive work in this area is necessary. An overarching conclusion is that the currently available evidence is suggestive of a causal role for oxidative stress in the aging process of *Drosophila*, but this evidence is not yet solid or definitive.

**Acknowledgments**  This work was supported by National Institutes of Health-National Institute on Aging grants R01 AG7657 (to R.S.S.) and R01 AG15122 (to W.C.O.).

**References**


Does Oxidative Stress Limit Mouse Life Span?

Florian L. Muller

Summary The free radical theory of aging, in its strongest form, holds that oxidative stress is the determinant of animal life span. However, evolutionary studies suggest that it is highly unlikely that life span is determined by a single biochemical process. Rather, one can restate the free radical theory in a more modest form, i.e., that oxidative stress is one of several biochemical processes that limit life span. An obvious prediction of this hypothesis is that knocking out antioxidant genes should result in shortened life span (assuming that knocking-out these genes in fact result in increased oxidative stress). In the best-case scenario, one would expect a segmental progeroid syndrome. In this chapter, I summarize recent studies examining the life span, pathology, and oxidative stress status of antioxidant and oxidative damage repair knockout mice (Sod1, Sod2, Sod3, Gpx1, Prdx1, Prdx2, and MsrA). Data from these studies indicate that whether or not oxidative stress is limiting to life span depends on what markers of oxidative stress are assayed. Specifically, the DNA damage product, 8-oxodeoxyguanosine (8-oxo-dG), is elevated in several antioxidant knockout mice that show no life span reduction. Whether elevations in 8-oxo-dG genuinely represent increased in situ oxidative DNA damage or arise during sample preparation is debatable. Other markers that suffer from minimal isolation artifacts, such as F2-isoprostanes, are only elevated in antioxidant knockout mice that actually have a shortened life span (the Sod1−/− to be precise). I suggest that measuring the expression of genes responsive to oxidative damage circumvents the issue of isolation artifacts that one way or another affects all biochemical assays of oxidative damage. By these criteria, Sod1−/− but not Gpx1−/−, Sod2+/−, or Gpx4+/− mice show an elevation in oxidative stress. If one takes as reference the standard set by DNA repair deficient mice, a strong case can be made that Sod1−/− exhibit “accelerated aging.” Thus, I conclude that the present data do not disprove the hypothesis that oxidative stress is limiting to life span in mice.

Keywords Superoxide, life span, oxidative stress, F2-isoprostanes, antioxidant enzyme, aging.
1 Introduction

The origins of the free radical theory of aging and the biochemistry of reactive oxygen species (ROS) have been reviewed in Chapter 1. In a landmark review, Beckman and Ames made an important addition to the field by dividing the theory into “strong” and “weak” versions [1]. The strong version of the free radical theory states that oxidative stress determines life span, whereas the weaker version postulates that oxidative stress is “associated” with age-related disease.

I want to suggest a further distinction. Evolutionary biologists have by enlarge concluded that aging is not adaptive and that it is the result of lack of selective pressure at advanced age, because of high extrinsic mortality reduces cohort seize over time independently of aging [2, 3]. In practice, this means that it is unlikely that one single biochemical process has been evolutionarily selected to “kill-off” the organism, but rather, multiple biochemical processes (although finite in number) are likely to cause deterioration more or less simultaneously (a similar idea has previously been put forward by Shmookler Reis [4]). I suggest that one can further divide the free radical theory of aging into an “ambitious” version, i.e., that oxidative stress is the life span determinant (reducing oxidative stress is necessary and sufficient for life span extension) and a “modest” version, i.e., oxidative stress is life span-limiting, even though it is not life span-determining (reducing oxidative stress is necessary but not sufficient for life span extension). This distinction may sound trivial, but in practice these two versions differ in one critical point: only the “ambitious” version predicts that reducing oxidative stress by overexpression of antioxidant enzymes or supplementation with antioxidants will result in increased life span (something that by enlarge has not been observed). The modest version would argue that reducing oxidative stress is necessary for extending life span, even though, in and of itself, it is not sufficient. But both the ambitious and the modest versions predict that increasing oxidative stress, by, for example, ablating antioxidant enzymes, will result in shortened life span.

In this chapter, I review the evidence concerning the question of whether oxidative damage can be life span-limiting. This may sound like a “duh,” but in fact, it is not. Other biochemical mechanisms at one time thought to be limiting to life span, such as telomere shortening or even mitochondrial DNA (mtDNA) point mutations, have not passed this test (first, second, and third generation telomerase knockout mice do not show a decreased life span [5–7]), and PolG mutant mice, with a 500-fold increase in mtDNA point mutation load, show a minimally altered life span [8]). I review the literature on oxidative stress status and life span of antioxidant knockout mice. In several instances, the knockout or deficiency of an antioxidant enzyme does not result in shortening of life span. This could be taken as evidence against the idea that oxidative stress is life span-limiting; however, the critical question is whether in these instances, oxidative stress is truly elevated. As I show, the answer to this question is not trivial, and it depends on the maker of oxidative damage under consideration.
8 Does Oxidative Stress Limit Life Span?

2 The Model: *Mus musculus* “laboratoriensis”

Lab mice originate from mouse fanciers of the late nineteenth century, and they have undergone considerable transformations compared with their wild cousins [9]. For one, they are tame enough to be handled without restrainers. Lab mice weight between 20 and 50 g, and they can be housed in relatively small containers. As such, housing the animals is relatively cheap, in most institutions, costing around $1 per cage (one to six animals) per day. Typically, precautions are taken to avoid infectious diseases (so-called barrier conditions), and the animals are tested for the presence of typical mouse pathogens (specific pathogen free conditions). Sentinel animals are sacrificed and analyzed for the presence of such pathogens at regular intervals. Although this means that never during their lifetime will these mice experience, say, viral influenza, they are not germ-free and bacterial infections readily occur. It could be argued that this favorable environment likely minimizes the deleteriousness of the phenotype of antioxidant knockout mice in particular and even knockout mice in general. For example, it has been shown that \( Gpx1^{-/-} \) (which as I describe below, are essentially normal) develop myocarditis after coxsackie virus infection, which is harmless in control mice [10]. Regardless of this consideration, not using barrier conditions for aging experiments means adding a further variable (unidentified epidemic diseases) to an already complicated experiment. Although simply “aging” a colony of mice is trivial, doing a properly controlled survival experiment is not.

Under optimal conditions, the life span of the commonly used C57B6/J mouse is ~30 months average and 40 months maximum [11, 12]. C57B6/J is considered a long-lived inbred strain. Dr. David Harrison maintains an excellent website at The Jackson Laboratory (Bar Harbor, ME), which contains the most up to date information on the life span of specific inbred, F2, and outbred mouse strains (http://www.jax.org/staff/harrison/labsite/tablea.html). Outbred strains such as CD-1 or 4-way crosses are not as long-lived, although F1 crosses of C57B6/J with DBA/J or CBA/J or C3He/J are noticeably longer lived than pure C57B6/J. Although it is scientifically acceptable to perform life span experiments on mixed backgrounds, this will add considerable variability, requiring more animals. Power calculations from the Richardson lab indicate that to reliably observe a 10% alteration in life span, ~80 animals per group are necessary.

Mice differ substantially from humans with regard to age-related morbidity. Although the major cause of age-related deaths in humans is cerebrovascular or cardiovascular incidents, in mice, this is not the case. Rather, the major cause of death is cancer [13, 14], the predominant type, varies depending on the inbred strain: for example in C57B6/J mice, it is lymphoma, whereas in C3He it is hepatocellular carcinoma [11, 13]. Another key difference is that mice do not spontaneously develop diabetes the way humans do. Despite these and other imperfections, one of the great advantages of mice as model systems is the ease by which recombination-deletions, gene targeting, is achieved (this is much more difficult even in rats). As such, mice have become the most popular mammalian model for aging.
and other physiological studies; given this and simple cost consideration, it is likely to stay that way for a long time to come.

3 Life Span of Antioxidant and Oxidative Damage Repair Knockout Mice

As in most areas of biology, gene targeting [15] has revolutionized the study of the free radical theory of aging. Several antioxidant knockout mice have been generated, although the actual life span has only been determined in a handful. I only discuss in depth those antioxidant knockouts for which an actual life span is available, but a few key points are worth summarizing first. Completely knocking out any component of the thiol redox system, either glutathione biosynthesis, thioredoxins, or thioredoxin reductases, results in early embryonic lethality [16–18]. Regrettably, the effect on life span of heterozygotes of any of these is not known. The oxidative stress status of even fewer antioxidant knockout mice is known for sure. Discussed below are those antioxidant knockout mice for which a life span curve is available and those that have been investigated with respect to oxidative stress status.

3.1 Sod1−/− or CuZnSOD Knockout

CuZnSOD is the major superoxide scavenger in the cytoplasm [19] and in the mitochondrial intermembrane space [20, 21]. This latter localization is likely of great importance because the mitochondrial electron transport chain can release superoxide into that compartment [22–24]. It was a surprise to the field, given the putative importance of CuZnSOD, that Sod1−/− mice seemed healthy at birth and that they were initially reported to be phenotypically normal [25]. This result would have proven highly inconsistent with the idea that excess superoxide and oxidative stress is somehow involved in aging. However, although Sod1−/− mice are essentially normal at birth, it is now known that they exhibit high levels of oxidative stress, multiple age-dependent pathologies, and have a 30% reduction in life span [26–36]. One could perhaps even say that Sod1−/− mice exhibit “acceleration” of selected age-related pathologies, akin to a segmental progeroid syndrome [37–40]. Sod1−/− females have very low fertility, or more accurately, Sod1−/− females exhibit a rapid, age-dependent decline in fertility ([35], see table in [36]), with a loss in female fertility being characteristic of aging in both mice and humans. Sod1−/− mice exhibit acceleration of age-related hearing loss [41–43] macular degeneration [44], and early appearance of cataracts [30], all of which also occur, albeit at a later age, in normal populations. In a recent study from our laboratory, we reported that Sod1−/− mice exhibit an acceleration of age related muscle atrophy [27], most likely the consequence of the subtle neuromuscular alterations described previously [25, 45, 46].
Indeed, age-related muscle mass loss “sarcopenia” is a hallmark of aging in vertebrate species (discussed extensively in [27, 47]). In that same study, we also observed a decrease in bone mineral density in Sod1−/− animals, a characteristic of osteoporosis. Sod1−/− mice also exhibit thymic involution (a critical piece of data buried in [48]), which is a hallmark age-related pathology in diverse mammals, including humans and mice [49].

Thus, several typical age-related pathologies are accelerated in Sod1−/− mice, and I argue that, if the precedent set by the DNA damage repair knockout mice is used, an even better case could be made that Sod1−/− mice indeed exhibit accelerated aging (assuming one accepts such a thing exists; [39, 40, 50]). However, although several age-related pathologies are clearly accelerated in these mice, the apparent cause of death in 50% of females and 80% of males is hepatocellular carcinoma (which is a classic age-related pathology in the CD-1 but highly atypical in the C57BL6 genetic background). Nevertheless, the remaining mice that show no evidence of hepatocellular carcinoma still have a reduced life span, and it is striking to note that carbonic anhydrase III, an age-related marker that decreases with age in both mice and rats [51], was found to be decreased earlier in the life span of Sod1−/− mice compared with wild-type (WT) mice [28]. So, is accelerated aging or the hepatocellular carcinoma responsible for shorter life span? The Richardson lab is currently tackling this question by rescuing the liver cancer in Sod1−/− mice by ectopic expression of SOD1 under a hepatocyte specific promoter.

The other question that arises is whether the Sod1+/− also exhibit a shortened life span, i.e., whether there is a dose response between CuZnSOD levels and life span. Based on a small N size study by Elchuri et al., the answer would seem to be “no.” However, the survival curve of the Sod1+/− seems shorter, and anything but large changes (bigger than 15%) would have been detected by such small numbers (intriguingly, a small increase in hepatocellular carcinoma was also observed in Sod1+/− mice compared with +/+ controls). The Richardson lab has done a preliminary survival curve of Sod1+/− in a mixed genetic background, which did in fact show a shorter life span than our typical C57B6 controls. The Richardson lab is currently exploring this question in more depth by performing a larger scale cohort survival and end of life pathology on the Sod1+/− mice.

### 3.2 MnSOD Knockout

MnSOD (Sod2) is the only scavenger of superoxide in the mitochondrial matrix [19]. Genetic ablation of this enzyme in mice (Sod2−/− mice) results in neonatal lethality between 1 to 24 days after birth, depending on the genetic background [52–54]. The cause of death in the longest-lived genetic background (at ~24 days after birth), is neurodegeneration [52]. These mice have ~4-fold increase in DNA oxidative damage as measured by 8-OH-guanine, 8-OH-adenine, and 5-OH-cytosine [55], and they also have severe enzymatic deficits consistent with massive oxidative stress [55]. The neonatal lethality of Sod2−/− is consistent with the notion that mitochondrial
superoxide is limiting to life span. But again, the more interesting question is whether there is a dose–response relationship between MnSOD levels and life span, i.e., whether the life span of the $Sod2^{+/−}$ mice is also decreased. To address this, the Richardson lab measured oxidative damage and life span in $Sod2^{+/−}$ mice, mice with one WT and one deleted allele of $Sod2$ [56–58]. In all tissues assayed, the activity of MnSOD was decreased by around 50%, and no compensatory increase in the activity of Gpx1 or CuZnSOD was observed [57–59]. Respiratory function and aconitase activity were compromised in mitochondria isolated from $Sod2^{+/−}$ mice [56], and both nuclear and mitochondrial DNA oxidative damage (8-oxodeoxyguanosine [8-oxo-dG]) was increased by approximately 30 to 80% [57–59]. Thus, in $Sod2^{+/−}$ mice, the increase in oxidative damage would predict a shortened life span if oxidative stress is indeed limiting to life span. Against expectations, the natural life span of $Sod2^{+/−}$ mice was statistically indistinguishable from that of WT mice [59]. If anything, the life span of $Sod2^{+/−}$ mice tended to be longer (median 894 vs 918, maximum 1189 vs 1239 days) in $Sod2^{+/−}$ compared with $Sod2^{+/+}$ littermates. In addition, various aging biomarkers (e.g., cataracts, immune response, advanced glyco-oxidation end products) also failed to show any differences between $Sod2^{+/−}$ and $Sod2^{+/+}$ mice. Thus, these results would seem incompatible with the idea that oxidative stress is limiting to lifespan. But is oxidative stress really increased? Different markers of oxidative damage yield different answers. For example, mtDNA deletions [60], F$_2$-isoprostanes, protein carbonyls (H. Van Remmen and A. Chaudhuri, unpublished data) and methionine sulfoxide levels [61] were not significantly elevated in $Sod2^{+/−}$ mice compared with WT mice (this is particularly critical regarding F$_2$-isoprostanes, because these are typically the most responsive parameter to experimental oxidative stress [62, 63]). Regarding the in vitro mitochondrial defects (e.g., decreased aconitase activity, respiratory function [56]): it is well known that mitochondria deteriorate (e.g., respiratory control ratio drops, aconitase function decreases) rapidly once the tissue is broken, and this decline continues as mitochondria are stored on ice [64], and it is likely that autooxidation (continuous exposure to 21% vs in vivo 3% O$_2$ tension)-driven oxidative stress is critical in the functional decline of isolated mitochondria [64, 65]. For this reason, it is conceivable that the differences in mitochondrial function observed between the $Sod2^{+/−}$ and WT mitochondria may in fact arise as a consequence of oxidative stress during isolation, rather than being endogenously present.

To some degree, all biochemical markers of oxidative damage are subject to artefactual oxidation during isolation, and it is therefore difficult to rule out that any differences observed between an antioxidant knockout mouse and its control were in fact endogenously present as opposed to arising to differences in protection from oxidative stress during isolation. What is needed is a marker of oxidative stress that is not influenced by artefactual oxidation during isolation. The answer may lay in the use of oxidative stress-dependent gene expression changes. Prolla’s lab performed gene expression studies on $Sod2^{+/−}$ mice; if microarrays of mice treated with paraquat (an artificial superoxide generator) are taken as reference [66], the gene expression pattern of $Sod2^{+/−}$ mice does not suggest elevated oxidative damage [67]. These data would indicate that oxidative stress in vivo in $Sod2^{+/−}$ mice is not elevated.
If the deficiency of MnSOD in Sod2+/− mice does not result in elevated oxidative stress in vivo, the normal lifespan of the Sod2+/− does not directly challenge the notion that oxidative stress is limiting to lifespan. What is clear though, is that when Sod2+/− mice are placed in pathophysiological situations thought to cause increased mitochondrial superoxide production, pathology is worsened [68–70]. For example, Sod2+/− mice are more susceptible to ischemia-reperfusion injury [68, 70–72], and when they are crossed to the transgenic SOD1 G93A ALS mouse model, result in accelerated disease course and shortened lifespan [69]. Conversely, when crossed to the SOD1 H46RH48Q ALS mouse model, which does not exhibit obvious mitochondrial dysfunction, Sod2+/− does not worsen pathology or shorten lifespan (F. L. Muller, Ph.D. thesis). My integrated interpretation of the above-mentioned data is that a 50% reduction MnSOD is sufficient to control the levels of superoxide produced during “normal” metabolism (there is no elevation in oxidative stress under basal conditions, and no shortening of lifespan), but not during pathophysiological situations that result in elevated mitochondrial superoxide production.

### 3.3 Sod3−/−/EC-SOD Knockout

The third and least abundant SOD enzyme is EC-SOD, encoded by the Sod3 gene. EC-SOD is located in the extracellular space [73]. Sod3−/− mice lacking EC-SOD are viable and fertile, and they do not show a decreased lifespan [74, 75]. Although the lack of lifespan shortening would seem to be evidence against the notion and oxidative stress is lifespan-limiting, it is unclear whether these mice actually have increased levels of oxidative stress: young Sod3−/− mice (3 months old) do not show an increase in urinary F2-isoprostanes; in contrast, at 3 months of age mice lacking CuZnSOD (Sod1−/− mice) show increased levels of F2-isoprostanes [75]. It is important to realize that mice differ in certain critical aspects in terms of aging from humans, i.e., the cardiovascular disease and hypertension, so prominent in human aging, are not age-related causes of death in mice. Hence, Sod3 might be much more important for human lifespan and age-related pathology.

### 3.4 Glutathione Peroxidase-1 Knockout

Glutathione peroxidase 1 is abundant in almost all mouse tissues, and it is traditionally thought to be the main cellular scavenger of H2O2 [76]. Against expectations, a complete knockout of this enzyme fails to generate a dramatic phenotype [77]. The only major pathological finding to date, is that Gpx1−/− mice develop cataracts at a considerably younger age than WT mice [78, 79]. There was an initial report that Gpx1−/− mice had reduced body mass [80], but we have been unable to confirm this in our colony, even in Gpx1−/−Sod2−/− double knockout mice [81]. Preliminary data
from our laboratory indicate that there is no difference in the mortality curves between Gpx1−/−, and WT mice to at least 36 months (Van Remmen et al., unpublished). This would seem to conflict with the notion that oxidative stress is limiting to lifespan, but again the question remains whether oxidative damage is actually increased by the absence of Gpx1. Although it is clear that Gpx1−/− mice are sensitive to a host of (exogenous) oxidative stressors (e.g., paraquat, diquat, infection), whether baseline levels of oxidative damage are elevated remains unclear (the same arguments as for the Sod2+/− apply here). Measures of DNA oxidative damage (8-oxo-dG) exhibit a modest increase (between 10 and 35%). F2-isoprostanes, perhaps currently the most robust marker of in situ oxidative damage [62, 63], do not show an elevation in Gpx1−/− mice compared with WT (H. Van Remmen and A. Richardson, unpublished). Mitochondrial H2O2 release measured using Amplex Red is not increased in skeletal muscle mitochondria from Gpx1−/− mice (Muller et al., unpublished). Microarray data indicate that Gpx1−/− mice do not exhibit the signature of oxidative stress (taken as WT mice treated with diquat) and that they fail to show a significant compensatory antioxidant up-regulation (Han et al., in preparation). Thus, the unaltered lifespan in the Gpx1−/− mice does not necessarily conflict with the notion that oxidative stress is limiting to lifespan, because it is not clear whether oxidative damage is actually elevated in the Gpx1−/− mice. The lack of elevated oxidative stress despite the lack of compensatory antioxidant up-regulation does suggest that Gpx1 is not the major scavenger of endogenously produced H2O2, even though it is necessary to protect the animal from high levels of H2O2 produced during stress events. My interpretation of the available data is the low levels of endogenously produced H2O2 are scavenged by peroxiredoxins [82].

3.5 Peroxiredoxin Knockout

The peroxiredoxins, initially known as thiol-specific antioxidants [83], are a family of cysteine-dependent thioredoxin peroxidases [84]. The substrates for these enzymes include (but are not limited to) hydrogen peroxide, organic peroxides, alky peroxides, and peroxynitrite [84, 85]. Six peroxiredoxins have been identified in the mammalian genome [84]. Based on genetic studies in yeast and mice and recent biochemical reevaluation, it is evident to me that peroxiredoxins rather than Gpx1 are the main scavengers of endogenously produced H2O2 [82, 86–89]. Knockout mouse models lacking peroxiredoxin 1, 2, and 6 have been generated, although the lifespan of only Prdx1 mice has been reported [90–92]. Peroxiredoxin 1 is a thioredoxin peroxidase found in most tissues, and it is especially abundant in erythrocytes. Mice null for peroxiredoxin 1 (Prdx1−/−) have hemolytic anemia, an increase in cancer incidence, and a reduced lifespan [92]. An increase in oxidative damage to both DNA and protein has been demonstrated in Prdx1−/− mice [92, 93]. Interestingly, the Prdx1+/− heterozygous knockout mice show an increased tumor burden but no decrease in lifespan compared with WT mice [92], a result similar to the lifespan and pathology study in Sod2+/− mice [59]. Peroxiredoxin 2 is also found in most tissues,
and it is especially abundant in erythrocytes [91]. Mice null for Prxd2 also suffer from hemolytic anemia [91], but apparently in a milder form than observed in the Prxd1−/− mice. Prxd2−/− mice also show decreased circulating erythrocyte half-life. In addition, senescence in mouse embryonic fibroblasts has been shown to be accelerated in Prx2−/− mice [94]. No data on lifespan are yet available for Prxd2−/− mice [91]. The strong phenotype of peroxiredoxin knockout mice stands in contrast to the lack of phenotype of Gpx1 knockout mice, underscoring the greater importance of peroxiredoxins in scavenging endogenously produced hydrogen peroxide.

3.6 MsrA Knockout

MsrA selectively reduces (using thioredoxin as an electron source) the sulfoxide of methionine back to its thioether. It is found in the cytoplasm and in mitochondria [95]. Overexpression of one isoform of this enzyme (methionine-S-sulfoxide reductase, MsrA) [96] leads to an increase in lifespan in flies [97] and yeast [98]. In mice, deletion of MsrA shortens lifespan [99], although the survival data are based on a small number of animals. The cause of death was not analyzed in this study, nor was general pathology reported. The Richardson lab is currently replicating the lifespan studies (preliminary survival curves, indicating no difference in lifespan between WT and MsrA−/− mice were presented at the 2007 meeting of the American Aging Association).

3.7 Knockouts of the Ogg1/Myh 8-oxo-dG Control System

Ogg1 and Myh act in concert to prevent the mutagenic effects of the oxidatively damaged nucleotide 8-oxo-dG (for a more detailed description, see Chapter 12). Knocking out Ogg1 in mice does not result in any gross phenotypical abnormalities [100], despite the fact that 8-oxo-dG levels are elevated severalfold (but see below regarding methodology) in both nuclear [101, 102] and in mitochondrial DNA (~20-fold higher in mtDNA [103]; but see also [104]). However, it has been noted that a residual 8-oxo-dG repair capacity exists in Ogg1−/− mice, both in nuclear and mitochondrial DNA [105, 106]. This residual repair activity is due to the cockayne syndrome B protein (Csb) [106], but is not dependent on transcription coupled repair [105]. A double knockout of both Ogg1−/− and Csb−/− has been bred: the increase in 8-oxo-dG was even more dramatic than Ogg1−/−, and Fapy-glycosylase–sensitive sites were increased in all cell types examined, not just in the liver. As with Ogg1−/−, the relative difference between Csb−/− and Ogg1−/− Csb−/− became more pronounced with advancing age [105]. Thus, at 9 to 14 months, there was a fivefold increase in Fapy-glycosylase–sensitive sites in hepatocytes compared with Csb−/− and Csb−/− Ogg1−/−. Despite this, Ogg1−/−Csb1−/− mice are viable to at least 22 months [105]. No formal survival studies have been reported with either Ogg1−/− or Ogg1−/−Csb−/− mice. However, that a 20-fold increase in 8-oxo-dG in mtDNA allows survival to at least 27 months does not bode well for any version of the free radical theory, which
argues that the DNA oxidative damage product 8-oxo-dG is central to aging. Although it is yet unclear whether mtDNA (or even nuclear DNA) mutagenesis is actually elevated in Ogg1−/− mice (one would think it would). Nor should it be taken as evidence that oxidative damage is not involved in cancer—the hepatocarcinogenesis present in Sod1−/− would dispute this claim. However, how much 8-oxo-dG is increased really depends on how it is measured [104]. There are profound disagreements across different labs and methodologies even when chemical standards are used [107, 108]. Thus, although some investigators report dramatic (>20-fold) elevations in 8-oxo-dG in mtDNA of Ogg1−/− mice, others find essentially no change [104].

The most likely explanation for the lack of cancer or lifespan reduction is that even if 8-oxo-dG is elevated, its mutagenic effects are minimized by the action of Myh, which prevents 8-oxo-dG dependent mutagenesis by removing mispaired dA opposite of 8-oxo-dG (see Chapter 12 for a more detailed mechanistic description). Consistent with this idea, it was recently reported that Ogg1/Myh double knockout mice do indeed have a shortened lifespan due to a massive increase in carcinogenesis [109, 110].

### 3.8 Combinations of Antioxidant Knockouts

The question of redundancy and complementation in the antioxidant system is often raised. For example, crossing Gpx1−/− and Gpx2−/− (neither of which have a particularly strong deleterious phenotype on their own) results in a lethal intestinal inflammation ([111], although this does not happen in a C57B6 background). This result seems to be the exception rather than the rule. For example, crossing Sod3−/− and Sod1−/− mice does not yield a shorter lifespan than is observed in Sod1−/− mice alone [75]. Similarly, we find that Sod1−/− × Sod2+/− mice also do not have a shorter lifespan than Sod1−/− mice alone [26]. The lack of “interaction” of various SOD knockouts is somewhat expected considering that anionic superoxide is highly membrane-impermeable (reviewed in [22, 24]) and reaffirms that the pools of superoxide are highly segregated. In fact, we have bred multiple antioxidant knockout mice involving Gpx1, Gpx4, Sod1, and Sod2, and we have found no synthetic aggravation of phenotype. Indeed, we have generated Sod1−/− Gpx1−/− Sod2+/− mice, which in terms of lifespan and general phenotype are essentially identical to Sod1−/− mice alone [26]. However, one interesting combination that has yet to be described is a double Prdx1 Prdx2 knockout mouse. Based on the similar distribution, close homology and similar function one would predict that a double knockout of these two enzymes be extra-deleterious, perhaps even lethal.

### 3.9 Gene Expression Changes in Antioxidant Knockout Mice: An Independent Measure of In Vivo Oxidative Stress and Compensatory Antioxidant Up-Regulation

Oxidative damage dependent gene expression changes provide an alternative way of assessing oxidative stress in antioxidant knockout mice. Foremost, they bypass the problems of artefactual oxidation during isolation that affect to varying extents
all biochemical measures of oxidative damage. But first, what genes are altered by oxidative damage? To answer this question, the Richardson lab (Han, Muller, Perez et al., in preparation) performed a large-scale unbiased expression analysis in mice injected with diquat (a superoxide producer). This resulted in thousands of gene expression changes: we compared the pattern of gene expression with previous array studies in cell culture (human cells treated with \( \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \)) and in mice hearts injected with paraquat [66, 112]. Although many genes are altered by oxidative stress in a tissue-specific manner, only a handful of these alterations are conserved across different tissues and different species. To put it succinctly, the conserved gene “expression signature” of oxidative stress is an up-regulation of p53-target genes (p21, \text{Atf3}, \text{Gadd45}\alpha, \text{Ddit4}, \text{Gdf15}, and \text{Plk3}) and metallothioneins. Interestingly, this is also one of the expression signatures of aging [67].

Using this information, is the expression signature of oxidative stress status present in antioxidant knockout mice? In the \text{Gpx4}\text{+/−}, \text{Sod2}\text{+/−} (muscle) and \text{Gpx1}\text{−/−} (liver) the answer is an unambiguous “no.” Alternatively, in the \text{Sod1}\text{−/−} liver, metallothioneins are indeed induced as are a number of p53 target genes. Thus, by this measure, only \text{Sod1}\text{−/−} mice (which do show a reduced lifespan) actually are under oxidative stress.

One of the caveats of interpreting phenotypes in antioxidant knockout mice is the possibility that other antioxidant enzymes are up-regulated in compensation. As such, compensatory up-regulations may mask the true extent of the phenotypic consequences, and hence the physiological importance, of the knocked out enzyme. Gene expression arrays provide the technology to address this issue. From our investigations of the gene expression changes in \text{Sod1}\text{−/−} and \text{Gpx1}\text{−/−} mice (liver), the simple answer is that there is not one antioxidant gene upregulation in the \text{Gpx1}\text{−/−} mice. In the \text{Sod1}\text{−/−} mice (liver), there is indeed an up-regulation of antioxidant genes, most notably a sixfold increase in sulfiredoxin and metallothioneins (Han, Muller, Perez, in preparation); stated more broadly, there is a general up-regulation of thiol antioxidants. Work in the yeast model indicates that absence of \text{Sod1}\text{−/−} could be partially rescued by giving thiol antioxidants in the media [113, 114]. Thus, compensatory antioxidant up-regulations may minimize the deleteriousness of the lack of CuZnSOD, but such an explanation cannot be invoked for Gpx1. Huang’s lab did not observe a robust antioxidant upregulation in \text{Sod2}\text{−/−} brains [115].

### 4 Conclusions

The data accumulated so far allow a rough answer to the question of whether oxidative stress is limiting to lifespan in mice. The tremendous deleterious phenotypes of \text{Sod2}\text{−/−} and \text{Gpx4}\text{−/−} mice make it clear that controlling the levels of oxygen free radicals is indispensable for life and that very high levels of oxidative damage are indeed lifespan-limiting. The shortened lifespan and acceleration of diverse age-related pathologies in the \text{Sod1}\text{−/−} mice indicate that even a less extreme elevation in oxidative damage is lifespan-limiting. The question now remains, How high does oxidative stress need to be to be lifespan-limiting? That is, what is the shape of the
dose–response curve between lifespan and elevated oxidative damage? Data from the \textit{Sod2}^{+/−} mice indicate certain markers of oxidative stress (8-oxo-dG) are elevated even though these animals show no decrease in lifespan. In fact, 8-oxo-dG levels are even more dramatically elevated in the \textit{Ogg1}^{−/−} mice, despite the fact that these mice do not show a reduced lifespan. However, there are some major issues surrounding the measurement of 8-oxo-dG. Other measures of oxidative damage, such as the \textit{F}_{2}-isoprostanes, are not increased in \textit{Sod2}^{+/−}, \textit{Gpx1}^{−/−}, or \textit{Ogg1}^{−/−} mice (see summary in Table 8.1) and gene expression changes indicative of elevated oxidative stress are only observed in the \textit{Sod1}^{−/−} not \textit{Gpx1}^{+/−}, \textit{Sod2}^{+/−}, or \textit{Gpx4}^{+/−} mice.

My own integrated assessment of the evidence is that no instance of unambiguous elevation of oxidative stress, without also observing a decrease in lifespan, has yet been reported in mice. Thus, I conclude that the hypothesis that oxidative stress is limiting to lifespan has (so far; with the caveat that the lifespan and oxidative stress status of few antioxidant knockouts has been explored in detail) not been disproved and that the modest version of the free radical theory may well prove to hold true.

\textbf{References}


Does Oxidative Stress Limit Life Span?

104. Trapp C, McCullough AK, Epe B. The basal levels of 8-oxoG and other oxidative modifications in intact mitochondrial DNA are low even in repair-deficient (Ogg1+/−/Csb−/−) mice. Mutat Res 2007.

Part II-B
The Comparative Approach
Mitochondrial Free Radical Production and Caloric Restriction: Implications in Vertebrate Longevity and Aging

Mónica López-Torres and Gustavo Barja

Summary In this chapter, studies focusing on the relationship between oxidative stress and aging in different vertebrate species and in calorie-restricted animals are reviewed. Endogenous antioxidants inversely correlate with species maximum longevity, and experiments modifying their levels can increase survival and mean life span but not maximum life span. Evidence shows that long-lived vertebrates consistently have low mitochondrial free radical generation rates and also a low fatty acid unsaturation of cellular membranes, two crucial factors determining their aging rate. Oxidative damage to mitochondrial DNA is also lower in long-lived vertebrates than in short-lived vertebrates. Conversely, caloric restriction, the best described experimental manipulation that consistently increases mean and maximum life span, also decreases mitochondrial reactive oxygen species (ROS) generation and oxidative damage to mitochondrial DNA. Recent data suggest that the decrease in mitochondrial ROS generation would be due to protein restriction rather than calories, pointing out a key role for dietary methionine. Longevity would be achieved in part due to a low endogenous oxidative damage generation rate, but also due to a macromolecular composition highly resistant to oxidative modification, as it is the case for lipids and proteins.

Keywords Longevity, aging, maximum life span potential (MLSP), free radicals, ROS production, DNA damage, mitochondria, caloric restriction, protein restriction, methionine restriction, fatty acid unsaturation.

1 Introduction

Aging is an endogenous and progressive process, probably due to more than one factor. So, even if animals are exposed to optimum conditions throughout their lives, they will still age at a rate characteristic for their species. Thus, their maximum life span potentials (MLSPs) are mainly determined by their genes, not by the environment. Conversely, mean life span is mainly determined by the environment and to a lesser extent by the genotype. Nowadays, oxygen-free radical
generation is widely accepted among the main causes of aging [1–4]. According to the theory, reactive oxygen species (ROS), endogenously produced during tissue respiration, continuously and progressively lead to tissue damage and finally to aging. In healthy tissues, mitochondria are the main source of ROS, and the only cellular organelles containing DNA. ROS can damage lipids, proteins, and most importantly, DNA. Evidence supports that the mitochondrial ROS generation rate can be one of the main factors determining the aging rate and thus the MLSP of each species. Many reports have shown that mitochondrial ROS (mtROS) generation is lower in long-lived animal species than in short-lived species (3–6). Interestingly, caloric restriction, the best known experimental manipulation that decreases the aging rate and increases MLSP in many species, consistently decreases mtROS generation rate [7, 8]. In both types of approaches, comparative models and dietary restriction, lower rates of mtROS generation relate to lower levels of oxidative damage to mitochondrial DNA (mtDNA) and proteins [9, 10] and to slow aging rate. Although the effects of caloric restriction are well established, the mechanisms underlying them are not fully understood. Recent studies on the role of specific dietary components are beginning to clarify this point [11]. Protein restriction, and more precisely methionine restriction, seems to be the factor determining the effect of dietary restriction, independently of calories, on mtROS generation and oxidative stress.

Alternatively, comparative studies also indicate that the aging rate and thus the MLSP are not only related to mtROS generation rate but also to the macromolecular composition. Long-lived species show low endogenous damage generation rates and at the same time a macromolecular composition highly resistant to oxidative modification. Long-lived mammals and birds have cellular membranes with low degrees of unsaturation, mainly due to a minimal presence of highly unsaturated fatty acids. These membranes are less sensitive to oxidative stress and show lower levels of lipid peroxidation and lipoxidation-derived protein modification [12–14]. In the same line of evidence, it has been recently reported that protein methionine content is negatively correlated with MLSP in mammals [15]; so, long-lived species would have proteins less sensitive to oxidative modification due to their comparative lower levels of methionine residues.

2 Mitochondrial ROS Generation Rate: Comparative Studies

As mentioned, mitochondria are considered the major source of ROS in healthy tissues because the main generator, the electron transport chain, is located at the inner mitochondrial membrane. Because mitochondria are also the only cellular organelles with their own DNA, they would be an important target for oxidative damage. Tissue levels of oxidative stress can be controlled either by the rate of ROS generation or scavenging. After intense analyses years ago, it was clarified that antioxidants, although probably important for protection against different age-related diseases, do not control the rate of aging. Different types of studies
support this idea. The initial hypotheses that aging could be the result of a decrease in antioxidants at old age was soon discarded, because it was observed that changes in tissue endogenous antioxidant levels as a function of age did not follow a consistent pattern and that they did not necessarily decrease in old animals [3, 16, 17]. The slow rate of aging of long-lived animals could theoretically be due to a constitutively higher antioxidant defense system. But when comparative studies were performed, the opposite situation was found. Long-lived vertebrates did not show higher but instead lower tissue levels of endogenous antioxidant enzymes and low-molecular-weight antioxidants [6, 18, 19] indicating, that their in vivo ROS generation rate must also be low. Experimentally increasing tissue antioxidant levels through either dietary supplementation, pharmacological induction, or transgenic techniques moderately increases mean life span sometimes, but it does not change MLSP [3, 20–24]. Only marginal or very small increases in MLSP have been rarely reported [25]. And finally, studies in which genes encoding for certain antioxidants are knocked out show that animals can develop different pathologies but that their aging rates do not seem to be affected [26, 27]. In summary, the data consistently indicate that antioxidants do not control aging and maximum longevity, although they can protect against many pathologies and different causes of early death due to their capacity to decrease oxidative stress in different situations leading to an increase in survival (mean life span) but not in MLSP.

Although endogenous tissue antioxidants do not determine the aging rate, their negative correlation with maximum longevity strongly indicates that the endogenous rate of free radical generation in tissues in vivo under normal conditions must be lower in long-lived than in short-lived species [6, 18]. If having low endogenous antioxidant levels, long-lived animals had high ROS production rates, they would not be able to cope with oxidative damage, and oxidative stress balance and homeostasis would be lost. The strategy of decreasing mtROS generation instead of increasing either antioxidant capacity or repair systems seems to be a better mechanism to increase longevity during evolution. To generate large amounts of ROS and then try to neutralize them before they reach important targets like DNA, or even worse, try to repair DNA after heavily damaging it, would be very inefficient. This is even clearer taking into account (1) the high energetic cost of continuously maintaining high antioxidant and repair molecules levels in tissues of long-lived animals, (2) the capacity of short- and long-lived animals to temporarily induce these protective molecules when needed, and (3) the proximity or even contact between main ROS sources and macromolecular targets of paramount importance for aging, such as mtDNA. Instead, lowering ROS generation rate near its main aging-related target decreases its damage much more efficiently and at a much lower cost. Indeed, almost every investigation performed to date on the subject has shown that mtROS generation rate is lower in tissues of long-lived than short-lived animals [3, 5, 6, 18, 28–32]. This is the case for all kinds of long-lived homeothermic vertebrates independently of their mass-adjusted rates of \( O_2 \) consumption (low in animals of large body size and high in small animals) and explains why endogenous tissue antioxidants
negatively correlates with MLSP across species (long-lived animals have constitutively low levels of endogenous antioxidants because they generate ROS at a low rate).

The studies performed in birds (exceptionally long-lived homeotherms) are particularly illustrative, because these animals, like the other two groups, bats and primates, live much longer than mammals of similar body size or metabolic rate, in contradiction with the rate of living theory of aging. In spite of their high rates of O\textsubscript{2} consumption, the three bird species studied to date, from different families (parakeets, canaries, and pigeons, with MLSPs of 21, 24, and 35 years, respectively) have lower rates of mtROS generation than mice and rats (MLSPs of 3.5–4 years) [5, 29–33]. In most cases, this is possible because the percentage of total electron flow in the respiratory chain directed to ROS production (percentage of free radical leak [FRL]) is lower in birds [3, 5, 30, 31]. Their respiratory chain transports electrons more efficiently, avoiding univalent electron leaks to oxygen upstream of cytochrome oxidase. Lower mtROS generation rates in human than in rat brain also have been reported recently [34]. Primates (especially humans) and bats also live longer than expected for their body size and metabolic rate. So, both small birds and large mammals have low ROS production rates and slow aging rates, whereas metabolic rate is low in large mammals but high in small birds. Thus, mtROS generation rate correlates better with MLSP than metabolic rate.

The presence of different FRL values in the mitochondrial respiratory chain from different species shows that the amount of electrons directed to ROS generation is not fixed and that it can be regulated in each species as it would be expected for a parameter controlling the endogenous aging rate. A role for mtROS generation in the control of aging also is supported by current studies in invertebrates [35], fungi [36], and cultivated cells [37]. Conversely, in most of the performed comparative studies, the difference in mtROS production between species was usually smaller than the difference in MLSP [5, 29–31]. This would be consistent with the idea that aging is caused by more than one single major factor.

The site in the respiratory chain where ROS generation is lower in long-lived species has also been studied. ROS production at the respiratory chain was classically attributed to complex III ubiquinone [38]. However, as it was initially described in submitochondrial particles [39, 40], complex I also contains an important ROS generator [29, 30, 34, 41–45] today accepted as part of mainstream basic knowledge [46]. Moreover, available studies indicate that the respiratory complex responsible for the lower mtROS generation in long-lived species is complex I [29–31, 33]. Concerning the identity of the ROS generator inside complex I, flavin mononucleotide [34, 47], ubiquinones [43, 44], or iron-sulfur clusters [41, 42, 48] have been proposed. Both flavin and FeS clusters are situated in the hydrophilic complex I domain facing the mitochondrial matrix compartment where mtDNA is located. On the contrary, ROS generated at complex III seem to be mainly directed to the cytosolic side [33], although recent studies suggest that part of the generation also could take place toward the matrix side [49].
Tissue antioxidants help to control oxidative stress in vivo. They are a first line of defense contributing to the maintenance of cellular oxidative stress homeostasis. But ROS neutralization and scavenging by antioxidants is not 100% efficient. There is always a certain level of oxidative damage to macromolecules even in healthy animals. Such oxidative damage affects cellular lipids, proteins, and DNA. Although ROS can damage different macromolecules, damage to DNA must be of crucial importance for aging because it can result in permanently altered or lost genetic information. ROS can attack DNA directly at the sugar-phosphate backbone or at the bases, producing many different oxidatively modified purines and pyrimidines, like the most commonly used marker of DNA oxidative damage, 8-oxo-7,8-dihydro-2′-deoxyguanosine (8-oxodG), and single- and double-strand breaks and DNA mutations. Although increases in oxidative damage to nuclear and mitochondrial DNA have sometimes [50–53] but not always [53, 54] been described during aging, continuous oxidative damage to DNA throughout life could have a more important long-term consequence due to its capacity to generate DNA mutations.

A general compensation between ROS production and scavenging must take place in both short- and long-lived animals, allowing tissue homeostasis and thus survival in both cases. The cellular ROS turnover must be high in the first and low in the second group of animals. But if short-lived species have high ROS production rates and high antioxidant levels, whereas long-lived species have low ROS production rates and low antioxidant levels, the final balance could be similar in both situations. This is not the case because in short-lived animals, the high rates of ROS production would lead to a higher local concentration of ROS near the sites of ROS generation. At those sites, the source of ROS and their targets are in such proximity that antioxidants cannot effectively intercept ROS before they damage the targets. The local concentration of ROS near targets relevant to aging (such as mtDNA) situated close to the places of ROS generation (the inner mitochondrial membrane) or even in contact with them is expected to be lower in long-lived species due to their lower rates of ROS production. This would result in a lower steady-state level of oxidative damage and accumulation of somatic mutations in their mtDNA and a slow rate of aging [6]. Supporting this idea, heart and brain 8-oxodG levels in mtDNA negatively correlate with MLSP in mammals [9], and this is in agreement with the lower urinary excretion of 8-oxo-7,8-dihydroguanine in long-lived animals than in short-lived animals [55]. Long-lived birds also generally show lower oxidative damage to mtDNA than short-lived rodents of similar body size [56]. The accumulation rate of mtDNA mutations with age is slower in humans than in mice, too [57]. Furthermore, the 8-oxo-dG concentration is around 10-fold higher in mtDNA than in nuclear DNA (nDNA) in the heart and brain of all the 11 species of mammals and birds studied [9, 56], a similar difference to that observed for spontaneous mutations when comparing both DNAs [58]. On the other hand, 8-oxodG in nDNA does not correlate with MLSP [9]. Although mitochondria
seem to lack some forms of DNA repair such as that for pyrimidine dimers, it is known that its capacity to repair 8-oxodG is similar or even greater than that in the nucleus [59]. Data suggest that rates of both ROS attack and DNA repair are higher in mtDNA of short-lived than in long-lived species, and they show that they are higher in mtDNA than in nDNA in all species [60] in agreement with the location of mtDNA very close to the ROS production site at the mitochondria. The higher rate of mtROS production of short-lived animals may be an important cause of their faster accumulation rate of mtDNA mutations during aging [57]. Mutations in mtDNA, both deletions and point mutations, occur with aging in postmitotic tissues and can reach high levels in old individuals [61–63]. The mutated mtDNA clonally expands towards predominance during aging, having detrimental consequences for cellular function.

4  Caloric Restriction, Mitochondrial ROS Production, DNA Oxidative Damage, and Longevity

Comparative studies suggest a causal relationship between mtROS production and aging, but experimental studies are needed to confirm it. Caloric restriction (CR) is the best-known experimental manipulation that decreases the aging rate and increases MLSP in different species, and it has beneficial effects for health in laboratory rodents, other animals and possibly primates including humans [64]. Physiological changes induced by CR have been extensively described in rodents and include, reduced body size, lower body temperature, and decreases in plasma growth hormone and insulin-like growth factor-1 (IGF-1) levels. Restricted animals also show lower glucose and insulin levels in plasma along with an increased sensitivity to insulin compared to ad libitum-fed animals. Delays in sexual maturation and decreases in fertility also have been reported. The modification in the insulin/IGF-1 signalling pathway has particular interest, because it is a highly conserved system that has been proposed to regulate longevity in a variety of animals from nematodes to mammals [65].

A growing body of evidence supports the hypothesis that CR works, at least in part, by decreasing oxidative stress [2, 10]. Because reports had shown that changes in antioxidant levels in caloric-restricted animals were inconsistent and could not explain the increases in MLSP [66], many studies have focused on the effect of CR on mtROS production [7, 8, 10, 66–68]. These studies, usually applying 40% CR (40% of the ad libitum food intake), show that long-term CR significantly decreases the rate of mtROS generation in different rat tissues ([10, 66–68]; Table 9.1), whereas after short-term CR decreases are only sometimes detected depending upon the tissue studied [7, 8, 10]. CR for 6–7 weeks was enough to decrease mtROS production and 8-oxodG in mtDNA and nDNA in rat liver [7]. Furthermore, the decrease in mtROS production in caloric-restricted rats, specifically takes place at complex I in every tissue studied up to date (heart, liver, and brain), together with no changes in mitochondria $O_2$ consumption and a decrease in %FRL, indicating
that mitochondria from caloric-restricted animals are more efficient avoiding ROS production per unit electron flow [7, 10, 67, 68]. These changes also have been found when comparing long-lived and short-lived species. This suggests that these changes could constitute a highly conserved mechanism for MLSP extension both within and among species.

The decrease in mtROS generation in caloric-restricted rats is accompanied by significant decreases in 8-oxodG levels, only in mtDNA, or both in mtDNA and nDNA depending upon the tissue [7, 8, 10, 67, 68, 69], and by decreases in oxidation-, glycoxidation-, and lipoxidation-derived damage to heart mitochondrial proteins ([70]; Table 9.1). Besides, repair of 8-oxodG in mtDNA through the mitochondrial base excision repair pathway does not increase, or even decreases, in CR [71]. In fact, mtROS generation, 8-oxodG steady-state levels in mtDNA, and 8-oxodG repair through mitochondrial base excision repair decrease to a similar extent in 40% CR, around 30–40%. Similarly to what happened with tissue antioxidant levels in long-lived animals, mitochondrial 8-oxodG repair is lower in caloric-restricted rodents, likely because their rate of mtROS production is also lower than in ad libitum-fed animals. Both, endogenous antioxidants and mtDNA repair systems can be temporarily induced when needed, decreasing global energetic costs. Decreasing mtROS generation is less costly and more efficient than continuously maintaining high levels of antioxidants and repair systems. All these data suggest that lowering the mtROS generation rate is a highly conserved mechanism developed during evolution and shared by both long-lived and caloric restricted animals to decrease steady-state oxidative damage to lipids, proteins and especially mtDNA, and thereby mtDNA mutations and the aging rate [3, 4, 8–10]. Recent reports also have found increases in mitochondrial biogenesis and mitochondrial bioenergetic efficiency [72, 73], decreases in cellular steady-state ROS levels [73] and lack of changes or even increases in O₂ consumption [72, 74–76] in CR models, including mammals, nematodes, and yeast.

Table 9.1  Summary of the effects of CR, PR, and MetR on oxidative stress and MLSP

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>CR (40%)</th>
<th>PR (40%)</th>
<th>MetR (40 and 80%)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>mtROS</td>
<td>↓(cx I)</td>
<td>↓(cx I)</td>
<td>↓(cx I and III)*</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mtVO₂</td>
<td>=</td>
<td>=</td>
<td>=</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>%FRL</td>
<td>↓</td>
<td>↓</td>
<td>↓</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ox. mtDNA</td>
<td>↓</td>
<td>↓</td>
<td>↓</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ox. proteins</td>
<td>↓</td>
<td>↓</td>
<td>↓</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MLSP</td>
<td>↑↑</td>
<td>↑</td>
<td>↑</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

mtVO₂, mitochondrial oxygen consumption; Ox. mtDNA, mtDNA oxidative damage (8-oxodG); Ox. proteins, specific markers of protein oxidation, lipoxidation, and glycoxidation; cx I, complex I; cx III, complex III.

*Effect of MetR was more important on complex I than on complex III based on the magnitude of the decrease in mtROS and on the number of tissues affected.
5 Protein Restriction, Methionine Restriction and Longevity

The antiaging effect of CR has been commonly attributed to the decreased intake of calories themselves rather than to decreases in specific dietary components. Recent reports in *Drosophila melanogaster* challenge this classical consensus [77, 78]. Carbohydrate or lipid dietary restriction does not seem to change longevity in rodents, whereas in studies on protein restriction (PR), increases in MLSP have been found in almost every investigation. Ten of 11 studies of PR in rats or mice (16 of 18 different life-long survival experiments in these studies) reported increases in MLSP (reviewed in [13]), although the magnitude of the increase (19.2% as mean increase in the 16 positive studies) was lower than that usually found in 40% CR studies (about 40% increase in MLSP). Because the mean degree of PR in the 16 positive studies was 66.7%, the MLSP increase expected at 40% PR would be around 11.5% (assuming proportionality between the degree of restriction and the intensity of the life extension effect, as it is the case in CR). Isocaloric methionine restriction (MetR), in contrast, increases MLSP in rats and mice independently of energy restriction [79–81]. Thus, the decreased methionine intake could be responsible for the MLSP increase induced by PR and for part of the life extension effect of CR. A 65% MetR in mice led to a significant MLSP increase of at least 10% [81], in agreement with the mean increase in longevity at 40% PR (11.5% increase). The rat MetR studies reported a 44% [80] or a 11% increase [79] in MLSP at 80% MetR. This would be equivalent to a mean 14% increase when extrapolated to 40% MetR, which is also within the range of the PR effect on MLSP in mice and rats. Therefore, available data suggests that reduced methionine intake can be responsible for all the life extension effect of PR (Table 9.1). The decrease in protein (and methionine) intake can be responsible for around one half of the life extension effect of CR in rodents (about 40% increase in longevity). This lower but significant life extension effect of PR compared with CR would agree with the idea that aging has more than one single cause. Recent studies in *D. melanogaster* support the idea of a CR life extension effect independent from calories [77, 78]. Reducing the amount of dietary casein from 4 to 2% and from 2% to 1 or 0.5% increases *D. melanogaster* longevity [78].

6 Protein Restriction, Methionine Restriction, mtROS Production, and Oxidative Damage

The effect of PR on mtROS generation has been recently analyzed; 40% PR decreases mtROS production specifically at complex I, lowers the %FRL, and decreases 8-oxodG in mtDNA ([11]; Table 9.1), and it also decreases specific markers of protein oxidative modification, fatty acid unsaturation, and complex I content [82] in rat liver mitochondria, very similar results to those found in CR [70]. Concerning the other two main dietary components, neither lipid [83] nor carbohydrate [84] restriction change mtROS production or oxidative damage to mtDNA in rat liver, in agreement
with their lack of effect on MLSP (see above). So, proteins are the dietary components responsible for the decreases in mtROS production and oxidative stress and possibly for part of the MLSP increase during CR. Because MetR was responsible for the life extension effect of PR, studies on the MetR effect on mtROS production and oxidative damage were needed, as concerning oxidative stress, only changes in liver and blood glutathione (GSH) had been reported in MetR models [80]. It was found that isocaloric 80% MetR (with dietary glutamate substitution) decreases mtROS production (mainly at complex I), %FRL, 8-oxodG levels in mtDNA, complex I content, protein oxidative modification markers, and fatty acid unsaturation in rat heart and liver mitochondria [85]. These results are very similar to those described in CR and PR, with the only difference that mitochondrial O$_2$ consumption values where increased in the MetR experiment. Nevertheless, additional experiments of isocaloric 40 and 80% MetR in rats without glutamate substitution (unpublished data) also showed dose-dependent decreases in mtROS production and %FRL without changes in mitochondrial O$_2$ consumption, strongly suggesting that MetR can be responsible for 100% of the decrease in mtROS generation and oxidative stress that takes place in 40% PR and 40% CR, and possibly for all the life extension effect of PR and part of it in the case of CR.

Other lines of evidence also suggest that methionine may be involved in aging and longevity. It was recently found that the methionine content of tissue proteins strongly and inversely correlates with MLSP in mammals [15]. Methionine content in proteins is also lower in tissues from long-lived birds than from short-lived mammals of similar body size [13]. Therefore, the longer the MLSP of a species, the lower its protein methionine content. Conversely, excessive methionine in the diet damages different vital organs and increases tissue oxidative stress, with similar negative effects to those observed in rats fed high protein diets (reviewed in [13]). Contrarily, recent studies show that MetR not only increases rodent longevity but at the same time slows cataract development, minimizes age-related changes in T cells, and lowers serum glucose, IGF-1 and insulin levels in mice [81]. MetR also decreases visceral fat mass (around 70%), plasma insulin, IGF-1, and insulin response to glucose, and avoids age-related increases in blood cholesterol and triglycerides in rats [86]. This dramatic decrease in visceral fat mass points out that such a change, characteristic of CR animals, could not be necessarily related to the lower intake of calories.

Various possible mechanisms could be responsible for the decrease in mtROS generation in MetR, PR, and CR. The three dietary protocols decrease the amount of complex I and IV [11, 82, 85] in rat mitochondria. The strong decrease in complex I concentration could explain the lower complex I activity detected in CR [87] and could be responsible at least in part for the lower mtROS generation in CR. The decrease in mtROS production during CR, PR, and MetR also could be related to other mechanisms. Dietary methionine could be detrimental due to its conversion to homocysteine in vivo. Homocysteine has a free thiol group that can be oxidized leading to the formation of protein mixed disulfides. Addition of oxidized GSH (GSSG) to mitochondrial complex I increases its superoxide radical generation rate [88]. This effect of GSSG can explain the direct correlation found between GSSG/
GSH ratio and 8-oxodG levels in mtDNA in tissues of aging mice [52]. Thus, mtROS production could be regulated by thiol agents, including homocysteine, offering another plausible molecular mechanism to explain MetR and supplementation effects on mitochondrial oxidative stress, tissue oxidative damage, and longevity. Moreover, the decrease in %FRL also could be the result of a regulated response instead of a direct effect of a methionine metabolite. Because methionine is a donor of methyl groups for different cellular reactions, changes in DNA methylation also could be partially the cause of the changes in the level of expression of many genes described in CR [64]. Further research on the molecular mechanism decreasing mitochondrial ROS production and oxidative stress during caloric, protein, and methionine restriction is clearly needed.

In summary, the decrease in mtROS generation and oxidative mtDNA damage that takes place during caloric restriction is due to protein, not to lipid or carbohydrate restriction. Methionine restriction can explain all the effect of either caloric restriction or protein restriction on these parameters. In contrast, the three dietary manipulations are able to increase maximum longevity (although to a different extent) decreasing the aging rate and the incidence of degenerative and age-related diseases. Long-lived species (mammals and birds) and caloric-restricted rodents share an important characteristic, they both have low generation rates of endogenous oxidative damage. Methionine plays a key role decreasing ROS generation during CR and probably is also implicated in decreasing the susceptibility to oxidation of proteins from long-lived species. In addition, long-lived animals posses membrane lipids less sensitive to oxidative stress due to their lower degree of fatty acid unsaturation.

Acknowledgements Our results described in this review were supported by grant BFU2005-02584 from the Ministry of Science and Education and from CAM/UCM groups (910521) (to G.B.).

References


31. Herrero A, Barja G. \( \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \) production of heart mitochondria and aging rate are slower in canaries and parakeets than in mice: sites of free radical generation and mechanisms involved. Mech Ageing Dev 1998;103:133–146.


Section III
Oxidative Stress in Human Aging and Diseases
10

Deregulation of Mitochondrial Function: A Potential Common Theme for Cardiovascular Disease Development

Scott W. Ballinger

Summary The pathogenesis of atherosclerosis has been intensively studied and described; yet, despite these advances, the underlying events that initiate atherogenesis are not yet fully understood. Consequently, cardiovascular disease remains the major cause of death and morbidity in the western world. Although studies are in general agreement that atherosclerosis is a chronic, inflammatory disease, and additionally, that increased oxidative stress plays a key factor in the early stages of disease development, the impact of such changes on the subcellular or organellar components and their functions that are relevant to cardiovascular disease inception are less appreciated. In this regard, studies are beginning to show that mitochondria are common targets of oxidative stress and that they may play significant roles in the regulation of cardiovascular cell function. A common theme among cardiovascular disease risk factors is that they can mediate mitochondrial damage and dysfunction, and moreover, that mitochondrial damage can significantly increase the risk for disease onset. Moreover, it has been recently suggested that the balance between mitochondrial energy efficiency, oxidant production, and thermogenesis that developed during human prehistory has long-term implications for human disease development, susceptibility, and evolution of disease. Hence, the emphasis of this review is discussion of the unique features of mitochondrial functional biology that potentially make it a central focal point in terms of the mechanistic basis of cardiovascular disease.

Keywords Atherosclerosis, cardiovascular disease (CVD) risk factors, mitochondria, oxidative stress, environmental oxidants, cigarette smoke.

1 Introduction

An estimated 71 million American adults (34.2% total population) have one or more types of cardiovascular disease (CVD). In fact, CVD claims more lives each year than the next five leading causes of death combined (cancer, chronic lower respiratory diseases, accidents, diabetes, influenza/pneumonia), and it was the underlying (primary) or a contributing cause of death in 37.3 or 58%, respectively, of Americans in 2003 [1].
Moreover, the prevalence of CVD in the United States increases with age: 11.2 and 6.2% of men and women respectively, between the ages 20–34 have CVD, whereas greater than half of men and women between the ages of 55–64 have CVD; more than three quarters of men and women (77.8 and 86.4%, respectively) over age 75 have CVD [1]. Hence, as the population ages, the incidence of CVD continues to rise. In addition to aging, numerous other factors influence CVD development, including environmental factors (e.g., air quality, tobacco smoke), hypercholesterolemia, and diabetes (section 4). The interaction of these factors with aging has led to the concept that CVD begins decades before the clinical manifestations of the disease; studies have now shown atherogenesis occurs in children, adolescents, and young adults; moreover, exposure to CVD risk factors during childhood or in utero increases the risk for adult disease development [2–11].

Atherosclerosis is the leading cause of death from heart disease, accounting for nearly three fourths of all deaths from CVD, and it is generally considered to be a form of progressive chronic inflammation resulting from interactions between modified lipoproteins, monocyte-derived macrophages, T cells, and cellular elements of the arterial wall [1, 12–15]. Inflammation and endothelial cell injury are thought to be the first steps in the development of atherosclerosis, leading to accumulation of lipids in injured areas of the artery. Because atherosclerosis is thought to be initiated by endothelial cell injury, many studies have investigated the potential sources and causes of endothelial cell dysfunction and damage. Endothelial cells form the innermost surface of the artery wall, and they provide a permeable barrier for exchange and transport of substances into the artery wall. They provide a luminal surface that is resistant to leukocyte adhesion and thrombosis, and they are important for vascular tone (the generation of nitric oxide [NO] by the endothelium mediates smooth muscle cell relaxation) and the formation and secretion of growth regulatory molecules and cytokines. Beneath the endothelial layer lies the arterial intima and smooth muscle cells (SMCs), which are normally “quiescent” but change to a proliferative phenotype (and thus are important in the fibroproliferative component of atherosclerotic lesion formation) that express and respond to cytokines and growth factors during atherogenesis.

2 Atherogenesis

The pathobiology of atherosclerotic lesion formation has been described in detail by a number of reviews [12–15]. Briefly, it is known that CVD risk factors, such as tobacco smoke exposure, hypertension, hypercholesterolemia (elevated low-density lipoprotein [LDL]), hyperglycemia, obesity, insulin resistance, or a diet rich in high saturated fats, increase the expression of adhesion molecules on the surface of the endothelium, resulting in increased leukocyte infiltration through the endothelium. Once in the arterial intima, monocytes become macrophages and engulf modified lipoproteins (e.g., oxidized LDL) and take on a “foam cell” appearance. Foam cells are macrophage that are engorged with lipids, and they are characteristic of the early stages of atherogenesis.
Concomitantly, macrophages proliferate and secrete growth factors and cytokines that contribute to and further initiate inflammation. T lymphocytes also participate in atherogenesis by joining macrophages in early lesion development, forming the “fatty streak” and secrete cytokines and growth factors that promote migration of SMCs into the intima, where they proliferate to form an intermediate, atherosclerotic fibro-fatty lesion and ultimately a fibrous plaque. The “stability” (propensity for plaque rupture) of the fibrous cap/plaque is reliant upon interstitial collagen, which is influenced by relative efficiencies of collagen fiber formation and degradation. Smooth muscle cells are responsible for the majority of collagen formation in the arterial wall; however, infiltrating T lymphocytes secrete factors that inhibit SMC-mediated collagen formation and promote the production of factors that degrade collagen. Finally, T lymphocytes also promote thrombogenicity by expressing factors that stimulate macrophage production of tissue factor, a protein that can initiate blood coagulation when encountering factor VII. Overall, it is clear that inflammation plays an important role in the initiation, progression, and rupture of the atherosclerotic plaque (Fig. 10.1).

**Fig. 10.1** Atherosclerotic lesion formation. (A) Healthy artery. (B) Induction of inflammation and early atherogenesis (in response to CVD risk factors); increased expression of adhesion molecules on the endothelial surface results in increased leukocyte adhesion and infiltration. (C) Fatty streak formation; macrophages engulf modified lipoproteins, secrete growth factors and cytokines that promote migration of smooth muscle cells into the intima. (D) Continued proliferation and inflammatory response result in the formation of the atherosclerotic fibro-fatty lesion with a lipid core and fibrous cap of a “vulnerable plaque” characterized by a thin-walled fibrous cap. (E) Inhibition of collagen formation and increased degradation of existing collagen of the fibrous cap results in plaque rupture and release of plaque contents into the lumen and thrombus formation. (F) Stenotic, stable plaque formation with a thick fibrous cap, which contribute to chronic ischemia.
2.1 Changing Concepts of Atherogenesis

Interestingly, the majority of acute coronary events are not due to the rupture of a single flow-blocking lesion (atherosclerotic plaques that cause significant arterial narrowing). In fact, the artery can enlarge to compensate for plaque development and retain blood flow to the heart [16–20]. Serial angiogram data show that only about 15% of myocardial infarctions are associated with extreme arterial narrowing [21]. In contrast, it is now becoming evident that atherogenesis tends to progress “outward,” or away from the lumen. Studies have now shown that atherosclerosis can be substantial within an artery without producing a stenotic effect [20, 21]. Presence of stenotic lesions usually indicates that the disease has progressed in a widespread and substantial manner. Hence, individuals may seem to have angiographically “normal” coronary arteries, yet still have substantial atherosclerosis associated with outward remodeling or compensatory enlargement of the artery. Finally, it has been shown that many individuals will have multiple disrupted plaques when presented clinically, suggesting that the concept of a single, vulnerable plaque as the culprit for an acute coronary event is an oversimplification [22–27]. Infarct studies to date have shown that >20% of individuals presenting acute coronary syndrome will have multiple disrupted plaques [25–28].

2.2 Mechanisms of CVD

Whilst there has been significant progress in understanding the pathological processes that are involved in determining CVD progression and development, the continuing status of CVD as the leading cause of death and morbidity in the Western world for the past century implies that there is still a significant lack of understanding regarding the mechanisms of CVD risk and initiation. As discussed previously, it is becoming evident that atherosclerosis is a disease initiated and influenced by inflammation; however, the mechanisms that initiate this inflammatory state are not completely understood. A plethora of studies have revealed that among the potential initiating causes of CVD, free radical- or oxidative stress-mediated changes within the cardiovascular milieu are among the most popular postulated mechanisms [29–33].

Oxidative stress is caused by reactive species (RS), a collective grouping of reactive oxygen and nitrogen species (ROS and RNS, respectively) that are capable of disrupting cell function and exerting cytotoxic effects when generated in unregulated amounts. The concept that oxidative stress is important in the pathogenesis of CVD was conceived from studies that noted the cytotoxic and atherogenic properties of oxidized LDL (oxLDL) cholesterol [34–38]. Subsequently, it has become apparent that oxLDL cholesterol can be produced via several pathways involving oxidative stress [31]; moreover, increased vascular oxidant stress has several biological effects, including the peroxidation of polyunsaturated fatty acids in membrane or plasma lipoproteins, direct inhibition of mitochondrial respiratory chain enzymes, inactivation of membrane sodium channels, and DNA damage.
Furthermore, increased vascular lesion formation and functional defects have been linked to increased levels of oxidatively modified proteins and lipoproteins, including oxidized LDL, lipid peroxidation products, nitrated and chlorinated tyrosines, and advanced glycation end products have been identified in patients with CVD [29–34, 44–47]. Hence, these findings are consistent with the notion that RS play a role in atherogenesis by modifying essential molecules such as lipids, proteins, and DNA and by altering their biological functions [48–51]. These events result in a proinflammatory environment and endothelial dysfunction, increasing the propensity for atherogenesis.

3 Mitochondrial Paradigm for CVD Development

Correspondingly, it may be no coincidence that a shared feature among common CVD risk factors such as hypercholesterolemia, diabetes, hypertension, stress, age and tobacco smoke exposure is increased levels of RS [31, 37, 38, 52–61]. However, the actual mechanistic associations of the majority of these factors (particularly environmental factors) to the initiation or development of CVD are poorly understood. For example, although it is known that increased oxidative stress originating from a variety of endogenous sources is a common theme among CVD risk factors [37, 38, 62–68], it is not yet clear whether these factors act to alter cellular function through similar or dissimilar mechanisms, or whether there are CVD risk factor-specific, or, common cellular “targets” that are relevant to CVD development. Another aspect of CVD development to be considered is that the events that lead to atherosclerosis usually begin decades before the clinical manifestations of the disease become evident. Accordingly, the etiology of atherosclerosis may entail “subtle” changes in the endothelial/intimal environment that over time, collectively result in the initiation and progression of atherogenesis. Hence, the mechanisms involved in CVD development would likely involve cellular components that (1) play important roles in a variety of cell functions (e.g., growth, death, signaling, and bioenergetics); (2) are susceptible to oxidative damage; and (3) are capable of gradual decline or dysfunction that would coincide with disease development. In these respects, the mitochondrion meets these basic conditions. Hence, it is suggested herein that among the potential mediating mechanisms of atherogenesis and CVD, mitochondrial damage and dysfunction is a significant initiating event.

3.1 Mitochondria and Their DNA

Mitochondria are ancient bacterial symbionts with their own DNA, RNA, and protein synthesis systems. Each cell contains hundreds of mitochondria and thousands of mitochondrial DNA (mtDNA) copies, which are maternally inherited. The mtDNA is a closed, circular, double-stranded molecule attached to the matrix
side of the inner mitochondrial membrane, and it is present in approximately 5–10 copies per mitochondrion. In mammals, the mtDNA is \( \sim 16 \) kilobases and encodes 13 polypeptides that are essential for oxidative phosphorylation (OXPHOS) plus two rRNAs (12S and 16S) and 22 tRNAs that are required for mitochondrial protein synthesis (the mtDNA has a different genetic code than the nucleus). The mtDNA encoded polypeptide genes are structural subunits for four of the five OXPHOS enzyme complexes; whereas all the subunits of complex II (succinate dehydrogenase) are encoded by the nuclear DNA (nDNA), the remaining four enzyme complexes (I, III–V) contain polypeptide subunits encoded by both the nDNA and mtDNA (Fig. 10.2). The nuclear DNA (nDNA) codes for all other mitochondrial proteins, including the mitochondrial DNA polymerase \( \gamma \) subunits, the mitochondrial RNA polymerase components, the mitochondrial transcription factor, the mitochondrial ribosomal proteins and elongation factors, and the mitochondrial metabolic enzymes. Numerous types of age-related diseases have been related to mtDNA mutations, mitochondrial dysfunction, or both in humans, including neurodegeneration, neuromuscular disease, deafness, blindness, diabetes, and cardiovascular disease [69]. Many forms of mitochondrial diseases can show marked clinical heterogeneity, and there are several aspects of mitochondrial genetics that contribute to such variability; however, a detailed treatise of the features of mitochondrial genetics is beyond the scope of this review, and in this regard there are several detailed reviews available [70–75]. The focus of this review is upon more global aspects of mitochondrial function and their potential roles in CVD development and susceptibility.

3.2 Mitochondrial Oxidative Phosphorylation

Mitochondria generate energy via OXPHOS, which “couples” electron transport with proton translocation for the production of ATP. Mitochondrial OXPHOS consists of five multiple subunit enzyme complexes embedded within the mitochondrial inner membrane, which coordinately function to generate mitochondrial ATP (Fig. 10.2). Electrons donated by NADH + H+ (derived from dietary carbohydrates and fats) to complex I (NADH dehydrogenase) or from succinate to complex II (succinate dehydrogenase) are shuttled to ubiquinone (CoQ) to yield ubisemiquinone (CoQH) and then ubiquinol (CoQH\(_2\)). Electrons are transferred from CoQH\(_2\) to complex III (ubiquinol:cytochrome \( c \) oxidoreductase), which transfers them to cytochrome \( c \). Electrons are transferred from cytochrome \( c \) to complex IV (cytochrome \( c \) oxidase) and ultimately to \( \frac{1}{2} O_2 \) to give water. The energy released during the movement of electrons along the electron transport chain is used to pump protons out of the inner membrane at complexes I, III, and IV, creating an electrochemical gradient across the inner membrane that provides the potential energy for ATP formation from ADP and Pi at complex V (ATP synthase). Mitochondrial ATP is transported out of the mitochondrion by the nuclear encoded adenine nucleotide translocase (ANT), which is a trans-inner membrane enzyme that mediates exchange of ATP and ADP out and into the mitochondrial matrix, respectively.
Mitochondrial oxidative phosphorylation and electron transport represent a series of multisubunit protein complexes that are encoded by both the mtDNA and nDNA. Reducing equivalents are provided by NADH to complex I (7 mtDNA encoded subunits, ∼40 nDNA encoded subunits) and succinate to complex II (4 nDNA encoded subunits). Electrons are shuttled to complex III (1 mtDNA encoded subunit, 9 nDNA encoded subunits) via ubiquinol. Cytochrome c carries electrons from complex III to complex IV (three mtDNA encoded subunits, 10 nDNA encoded subunits), with the reduction of O$_2$ to form H$_2$O (a reaction inhibited by NO). As electrons move through the series of enzyme complexes, protons (H$^+$) are pumped across the inner membrane at complexes I, III, and IV, creating an electromotive differential across the inner membrane. Complex V (ATP synthase, two mtDNA encoded subunits, 10 nDNA encoded subunits) uses the potential energy created by this proton gradient to condense a molecule of ADP with P$^i$ to form ATP. ATP is subsequently transported out of the mitochondrial matrix by the ANT, which is also responsible for moving cytoplasmic ADP into the mitochondrial matrix. Of the electrons entering the transport chain, it has been estimated that 2–4% escape the confines of the “chain” to form O$_2^−$. Inhibitors of electron transport (e.g., NO) can increase mitochondrial oxidant (O$_2^−$) production. NO can impair electron flow at cytochrome c oxidase (complex IV) by oxidizing the heme group of cytochrome $aa_3$, and it is competitive with O$_2^−$. NO also inhibits the bc1 segment of complex III, resulting in increased autooxidation of ubisemiquinone and O$_2^−$ production. At low NO concentrations, the dismutation of O$_2^−$ (via SOD2) and formation of H$_2$O$_2$ is favored, which can subsequently diffuse from the mitochondrion and act as a signaling molecule, or, is reduced by GSH to form H$_2$O. At higher NO concentrations, O$_2^−$ reacts with NO to form ONOO$^−$, which may promote cytochrome c release and apoptosis, mtDNA damage, inhibit electron transport, and inactivate mitochondrial proteins (e.g., mitochondrial damage). In the presence of CO$_2$, ONOO$^−$ yields nitrosoperoxycarbonate (ONOOCO$_2^−$), which has been proposed to diminish oxidation and increase nitration reactions.
3.3 Mitochondrial Oxidant Production and Regulation

Although mitochondria have been stereotyped as “cellular powerplants,” they are also the primary sources of endogenous cellular ROS (Fig. 10.2). In fact, the primary function of the mitochondrion in some cells may be as a signaling organelle [76]. During electron transport, oxygen can pick up electrons directly from the ubiquinone site in complex III and flavin mononucleotide group of complex I to generate superoxide (O$_2^-$) [77–81]. Mitochondrial generated O$_2^-$ can be converted to hydrogen peroxide (H$_2$O$_2$) by mitochondrial manganese superoxide dismutase (SOD2). Under basal conditions, mitochondrial H$_2$O$_2$ generation represents up to 2% of the oxygen consumption by this organelle, with mitochondrial H$_2$O$_2$ fluxes altered by drugs or toxins such as electron transport inhibitors, uncouplers, redox cycling molecules, or by local (endogenous) and exogenous environmental changes [78, 82–86]. H$_2$O$_2$ can be converted to H$_2$O by the glutathione redox system, react with O$_2^-$, or, in the presence of transition metals, yield highly reactive hydroxyl radicals (•OH) [87]. Mitochondrial generated H$_2$O$_2$ can act as a signaling molecule (H$_2$O$_2$ is freely diffusible), stimulating growth and survival pathways or cytochrome c release and caspase activation, at low or high H$_2$O$_2$ concentrations, respectively [88–92].

It also has been suggested that mitochondria are important in the regulation of many genes involved in cellular defense mechanisms, pathogen defenses, immunological responses, and expression of cytokines and cell adhesion molecules via the generation of ROS by the mitochondrial respiratory chain that serve as the intermediate second messengers for the activation of nuclear factor-κB (NFκB) by tumor necrosis factor (TNF)α and interleukin (IL)-1 [93–96]. Similarly, inhibition of mitochondrial respiratory function prevents H$_2$O$_2$-induced transactivation of the epidermal growth factor receptor and stimulation of downstream targets c-Jun NH$_2$-terminal kinase and Akt and H$_2$O$_2$-induced growth factor transactivation (both vascular endothelial growth factor-2 receptor and platelet-derived growth factor (PDGF)β receptor in endothelium and fibroblasts, respectively). Growth factor receptor transactivation and its downstream signaling in response to H$_2$O$_2$ is abrogated by mitochondrial targeted antioxidants, but not by nontargeted counterparts, suggesting the involvement of mitochondrial oxidants in these events [97]. Antioxidant expression and cytokines are also important factors in influencing the steady-state levels of specific mitochondrial oxidants, and thus they play a significant role in cell function and redox signaling in the mitochondrion. Cytokines such as PDGF and TNFα have been shown to either directly or secondarily alter cellular and/or mitochondrial oxidant production and SOD2 expression [98–100].

Several factors regulate mitochondrial oxidant generation, including local concentrations of both RNS and ROS, mitochondrial antioxidants, cytokines, electron transport efficiency, metabolic reducing equivalent availability (NADH and FADH$_2$), uncoupling protein (UCP) activities, and overall organelle integrity (damage to membranes, DNA, and proteins). NO concentration regulates mitochondrial electron transport by modulating complex IV activity, which influences ATP production, O$_2^-$ generation, and oxygen diffusion [101, 102]. Low NO concentra-
tions can modulate mitochondrial respiration and oxygen consumption through reversible binding at complex IV, whereas higher concentrations of NO result in increased peroxynitrite (ONOO⁻) formation (via reaction with O₂⁻) and can contribute to cytotoxicity [104–107]. In the mitochondrion, it is likely that ONOO⁻ reacts with CO₂ (the principle site of CO₂ is the mitochondrion) to form a nitrosoperoxycarbonate intermediate (ONOOCO₂⁻). It has been shown that ONOO⁻ efficiently mediates nitration reactions (thus diminishing oxidation yields) [50, 108]. In this manner, the relative levels of NO and O₂⁻ are important in influencing mitochondrial respiratory regulation and the production of downstream reactive species (e.g., H₂O₂, ONOO⁻).

The relative efficiency of the mitochondrion to convert caloric energy into ATP also influences oxidant production. Highly efficient or “tightly” coupled mitochondria are the most economical in terms of generating the maximum amount of ATP with a minimal loss of caloric energy, whereas “loosely” coupled mitochondria are less energetically efficient. A related feature to this coupling is that tightly coupled mitochondria are more prone to donate electrons to O₂ to form O₂⁻ compared with loosely coupled mitochondria. Hence, although tightly coupled mitochondria generate ATP more efficiently compared with loosely coupled mitochondria, they also produce greater levels of O₂⁻. The potential ramifications of these differences in energy and oxidant production is discussed in greater detail later in this review (see Section 5).

Mitochondrial UCPs are a family of mitochondrial anion carriers important in proton conductance across the inner membrane; thus, they play a role in regulating mitochondrial membrane potential, thermogenesis, and mitochondrial ROS production [109–115]. UCPs modulate proton “leak” across the inner membrane and therefore influence membrane potential and the production of mitochondrial oxidants. The greatest levels of mitochondrial O₂⁻ production are associated with high membrane potentials; hence, proton leak reduces mitochondrial oxidant formation. Consequently, low UCP expression is thought to be associated with reduced proton leakage, high membrane potentials, and increased O₂⁻ production. Interestingly, it has been noted that O₂⁻ activates UCPs indirectly, through lipid peroxidation products, and reactive aldehydes (4-hydroxynonenal), suggesting that a feedback mechanism of oxidant stress may contribute to the regulation of UCP expression [116].

### 3.4 Mitochondrial Damage and Function

Numerous reports have shown that mitochondria are sensitive to both ROS- and RNS-mediated damage and alterations in function [78, 103, 117–121]. The susceptibility of the mtDNA to damage is thought to be due to several factors, including the lack of both protective histone and nonhistone proteins and a relatively limited DNA repair capability compared with the nucleus. The mtDNA is attached to the matrix side of the mitochondrial inner membrane, placing it in proximity to reactive lipophilic species and reactive lipid oxidation products (generated within
the membrane) that are capable of modifying the mtDNA. In vitro studies have shown that ROS and RNS induce a variety of effects in both vascular endothelial cells and SMCs, including preferential and sustained mtDNA damage, altered mitochondrial transcript levels, and decreased mitochondrial protein synthesis [121]. Increased mtDNA damage and decreased transcriptional and translational functions would potentially decrease the efficiency of mitochondrial replication and assembly of respiratory chain proteins, further increasing mitochondrial dysfunction and susceptibility to the damaging effects of ROS/RNS. In support of this notion are studies that show high levels of NO decrease the levels of mitochondrial respiratory proteins in endothelial cells and increase the susceptibility to cell death [105]. In vivo studies have shown that cardiovascular mtDNA damage is increased in both humans and animals with CVD [122–125]. Atherosclerotic lesions in brain microvessels from Alzheimer’s (AD) patients and rodent AD models also have significantly more mtDNA deletions and abnormalities, (as do the endothelium and perivascular cells), suggesting the mitochondria within the vascular wall can be central targets for oxidative stress induced damage [126]. Chronic ischemia increases both mtDNA deletions in human heart tissue [124] and cardiac mitochondrial sensitivity to inhibitors of cellular respiration [127]. Animal studies have shown that vascular mtDNA damage is increased in animal models of atherosclerosis and that this damage occurs before or coincidental with disease development [122, 123]. Moreover, deficiencies in mitochondrial antioxidants (SOD2), regulatory proteins (UCPs), or both that modulate mitochondrial oxidant production have been shown to promote the onset of CVD in vivo, consistent with the notion that mitochondrial generated oxidants can play a contributory role in atherogenesis [122, 128]. Furthermore, decreased SOD2 activity increased susceptibility to ischemia/reperfusion mediated cardiac damage and resistance to cardiac preconditioning [129]. In contrast, overexpression of mitochondrial antioxidants and/or UCPs has been shown to protect against the effects of ischemia/reperfusion and oxidative stress [130–132]. Ex vivo studies in rat heart have shown that ischemia reduces myocardial ANT activity, and reperfusion further contributes to the loss of both ANT and OXPHOS capacities [120]. Using a mouse model for myocardial infarction (MI), it was found that previous MI is associated with increased RS (left ventricle), and decreased mtDNA copy number, mitochondrial encoded gene transcripts, and related enzymatic activities (complexes I, III, and IV). However, nuclear encoded genes (complex II) and citrate synthase, are unaffected [133]. Finally, cardiotoxic RS generators increase mtDNA deletions and lipid peroxidation in the myocardial mitochondria; overexpression of mitochondrial antioxidants prevents these effects and increases cardiac tolerance to ischemia [130].

Interestingly, studies examining the role of UCPs have yielded somewhat conflicting results; one study reported that overexpression of UCP-1 (a protein typically expressed in brown adipose tissue) in aortic smooth muscle cells in vivo increases oxidant formation, hypertension, and exacerbates atherosclerotic lesion formation in a cholesterol-independent manner [134]. Although these results were somewhat unexpected, because overexpression of UCP-1 in skeletal muscle reduces blood pressure and increases insulin sensitivity in genetically obese mice and
studies investigating the impact of UCP-2 (a widely expressed UCP including the cardiovascular system) have shown that it decreases ROS generation and mitochondrial overload in cardiomyocytes, and influences atherosclerotic lesion formation in vivo [128, 131, 135], the presence of multiple UCP isoforms raises the possibility of distinct functional importance of the different UCP proteins, potentially explaining the contrasting experimental results between UCP-1 and UCP-2 described above. Similarly, studies examining the effects of cytosolic SOD (SOD1) overexpression failed to reduce atherogenesis [136], whereas reduced SOD2 levels hastened the onset of atherogenesis in mice [122]. Consequently, the impact of endogenous UCP and SOD expression in the absence or overexpression of specific UCPs or SODs (e.g., UCP-2 or SOD2 levels during UCP-1 or SOD1 overexpression, respectively) may shed light on the relative importance of each in CVD development. Nonetheless, these studies do suggest that altered metabolic and antioxidant efficiency (and thus O$_2^-$ formation) due to changes in UCP activity, SOD activity, or both can contribute to vascular dysfunction.

4 CVD Risk Factors and Mitochondrial Damage

Many “proatherogenic” factors (i.e., hypercholesterolemia, hyperglycemia, cigarette smoke exposure) have been associated with significant alterations in mitochondrial function and damage [2, 121–123]. For example, incubation of endothelial cells with concentrations of oxLDL that are associated with cytoprotection induces mitochondrial complex I activity in a manner that seems to be dependent on the induction of oxidative stress [137]. Similarly, oxLDL treatment of human macrophages results in the alteration of several mitochondrial functions including antioxidant expression (SOD2), oxidant generation, and membrane potentials, which in turn, may contribute to further oxLDL formation [138–140].

Cholesterol administration in rabbits is associated with impaired mitochondrial function [141]. SOD2 activity and glutathione (GSH) concentration are significantly increased in the atherosclerotic intima when compared with the media of the aorta in hyperlipidemic rabbits; interestingly, SOD2 activity and GSH concentration also are found to be inversely related with age and plaque size, suggesting that they may be related to the early stages of atherosclerotic lesion formation in that they represent an early “protective” response to increased mitochondrial oxidation that occurs during the initial events of CVD risk factor exposure, atherogenesis, or both [138]. Finally, hypercholesterolemic mice sustain significantly higher levels of mtDNA damage in their aortic tissues compared to age-matched normocholesterolemic controls [122].

Hyperglycemia induces increased O$_2^-$ generation in endothelial cells in vitro, and studies suggest that the majority of this O$_2^-$ is produced by the mitochondrion [142, 143]. It has been proposed that high glucose levels increase the mitochondrial inner membrane potential as a result of overproduction of electron donors (e.g., NADH and succinate/FADH$_2$) by the citric acid cycle, which results in increased
production of $O_2^-$ [142–144]. The finding that overexpression of the mitochondrial antioxidant SOD2 prevents the hyperglycemia associated production of $O_2^-$, as do mitochondrial electron complex I inhibitors or uncouplers of oxidative phosphorylation, supports this notion [142, 144]. Interestingly, these same factors also prevent glucose-induced activation of phosphokinase C and NFκB in endothelial cells and decrease IL-1β, IL-1β/TNFα/interferon-γ activation of NFκB and the induction of inducible nitric-oxide synthase (iNOS) in insulin-producing cells (RINm5F) [145, 146]. In contrast, suppression of SOD2 increases activation of NFκB and the iNOS promoter; catalase, Gpx, and SOD1 did not affect the cytokine-induced activation of NFκB and the iNOS promoter [147]. Similar to the effects of hyperglycemia alone, mitochondrial electron transport inhibitors or antioxidants completely inhibit the effects of leptin, a hormone that is increased in insulin-resistant relatives of diabetics [148–151]. Leptin is a circulating hormone that increases fatty acid oxidation, is involved in body weight control, and is secreted mainly from adipose tissues [152, 153]. A leptin receptor has been identified on endothelial cells, and leptin has been shown to promote both angiogenesis and inflammation [154, 155]. It also has been noted that leptin increases oxidative stress in endothelial cells in a dose-dependent manner, and its effects are additive with glucose [151]. Additionally, angiotensin II (AngII) stimulates vascular cell adhesion molecule-1 (VCAM-1), activates NFκB, and stimulates degradation of both inhibitor of κB (IkBα) and IkBβ [156]; degradation of IkBs is not inhibited by SOD1 or catalase, whereas inhibitors of mitochondrial respiration inhibit AngII induced IkB degradation, suggesting that AngII induces intracellular oxidative stress (presumably mitochondrial) in endothelial cells that stimulates IkB degradation and NFκB activation. This activation enhances the expression of VCAM-1 and probably other genes involved in the early stages of atherosclerosis. These findings suggest that mitochondrial oxidant production plays an important role in the redox related regulation of these factors.

Of the 500,000 annual CVD related deaths in the United States each year, 20% are directly attributed to tobacco smoke exposure; 40,000 of these deaths are related to second-hand tobacco smoke exposure [1, 157]. However, despite these major cardiovascular health consequences, and the fact that tobacco smoke exposure is one of the strongest predictors of CVD development, molecular mechanisms of how tobacco smoke exposure specifically results in cardiovascular cell dysfunction and CVD development are not well understood. Additionally, it has only been recently appreciated that prenatal and childhood exposure to tobacco smoke plays a significant role in adult CVD risk, yet even these effects of prenatal and childhood tobacco smoke exposure on adult CVD development are currently in the early stages of investigation [2]. One apparent observation is that the mitochondrion seems to be a common target for components of tobacco smoke exposure and perhaps other environmental oxidants associated with disease development.

Tobacco smoke exposure has several cardiovascular and mitochondrial effects, including decreased arterial oxygen carrying capacity (via increased serum carboxyhemoglobin) associated with increased OXPHOS dysfunction in cardiac cells [52, 158–160], and increased generation of mitochondrial RS in platelets
Rat myocardial cytochrome oxidase activity is significantly decreased after exposure to secondhand smoke; activity continues to decline with prolonged exposures to tobacco smoke [158], and it seems to enhance myocardial OXPHOS dysfunction during reperfusion injury [52]. Similarly, cigarette smoke exposure increases sensitivity to heart ischemia/reperfusion injury in rats [52]. Second-hand smoke exposure in mice causes significant aortic mtDNA damage, reduced ANT activity, increased nitration and inactivation of SOD2, and mitochondrial dysfunction compared with unexposed mice, and when combined with other CVD risk factors (e.g., hypercholesterolemia), it accelerates both mitochondrial damage and atherogenesis [123]. It also has been shown that benzo-[a]-pyrene (a component of cigarette smoke) induces an atherogenic phenotype associated with up-regulated expression of mtDNA transcripts in rat smooth muscle cells; cultures made from these cells have increased growth rates and marked enhancement of proliferation to serum mitogens [162].

5 Mitochondrial Function and Genetics May Influence Disease Susceptibility

Why some individuals exposed to the same CVD risk factor with identical risk factor profiles will go on to develop CVD, whereas others will not, is simply not understood. One explanation is that CVD is a multifactorial disorder that involves both environmental and genetic factors. It has been estimated that 70–80% of CVD is attributable to modifiable nongenetic factors, which is consistent with the notion that environmental factors heavily influence the risk of CVD development [163]. A corollary to this is that an individual’s response to an environmental CVD risk factor is likely to be genetically influenced. Numerous studies have looked for potential associations between polymorphic gene mutations and CVD development; however, many of the noted associations reported in small-scale studies were not found in larger scale studies, or they were not as predictive for CVD risk as plasma markers (e.g., cholesterol levels) [164–170]. Studies also have investigated potential associations between smoking-related CVD risk and gene polymorphisms in small-scale studies [165, 166]. Similarly, these associations were not observed in larger scale studies, or it was found that DNA adduct formation in vascular tissues (a feature of tobacco smoke exposure that has been reported to correlate with CVD severity) did not correlate with genotype [167, 171]. Currently, it seems that <5% of CVD results from single mutations, such as those regulating lipoprotein synthesis [172]. Hence, in the majority of instances it is likely that individual CVD development is the result of multigenetic factors that modulate biological responses to an environmental challenge. Consequently, it has been hypothesized that multiple genes involved in many aspects of vascular regulation, lipoprotein metabolism, inflammation, metabolic control and redox tone (the balance between oxidant generation and neutralization by antioxidants) and their interaction with environmental factors will influence CVD susceptibility. Recent studies on CVD susceptibility
and resistance support the concept of groups of genes being involved in atherogenic susceptibility, and although important in advancing the understanding of gene “groups” that may be involved in influencing individual biological responses to an environmental challenge, they do not address the underlying issue of why these differences exist, nor how they might have developed [173, 174]. In this respect, none of the current studies has considered the potential role of the “other” eukaryotic genome, the mtDNA or the mitochondrion, and the possibility for mitochondrial–nuclear interaction in influencing individual susceptibility for CVD development.

As discussed in sections 3 and 4, the efficacy of mitochondrial function and oxidant production is dependent upon a number of factors including local concentrations of both RNS and ROS, mitochondrial antioxidants, cytokines, electron transport efficiency, metabolic reducing equivalent availability (NADH and \(\text{FADH}_2\)), UCP activities, and overall organelle integrity (damage to membranes, DNA, and proteins). Of these factors, the coupling efficiency of the mitochondrion has perhaps received the least attention in relation to CVD development. Tightly coupled mitochondria have (1) electron transport that is highly efficient at pumping protons out of the mitochondrial inner membrane (complexes I, III, and IV); and (2) an ATP synthase (complex V) that is highly efficient at converting proton flow through its proton channel into ATP. Consequently, tightly coupled mitochondria

![Diagram](image_url)

**Fig. 10.3** The impact of age and CVD risk factor exposure on mitochondrial oxidative phosphorylation and oxidant generation. (A) Healthy mitochondria generate sufficient ATP and regulated amounts of mitochondrial oxidants to mediate proper cell growth, programmed cell death, resulting in “normal” cell function. (B) Aging and/or exposure to CVD risk factors results in increased mitochondrial damage, causing decreased ATP production, and/or dysregulation of mitochondrial oxidant production. Depending upon the demands of the cell (e.g., cells with high energy demands are sensitive to changes in ATP production, whereas those primarily reliant on mitochondria as signaling organelles for proper function are sensitive to changes in mitochondrial oxidant production), deficits in energy production, and/or inappropriate levels of mitochondrial oxidant production lead to cell dysfunction and ultimately, disease development.
are the most economical in terms of generating the maximum amount of ATP with a minimal loss of caloric energy (e.g., heat, or thermogenesis). Additionally, tightly coupled mitochondria will usually have higher membrane potentials (relative to “less coupled” mitochondria) and a greater proportion of electron carriers in a reduced state (occupied by electrons); thus, they are also more prone to donate electrons to oxygen to form $O_2^-$. In contrast, loosely coupled mitochondria have (1) reduced proton pumping efficiency (complexes I, III, and IV) within electron transport; and/or (2) require more protons to make ATP by the ATP synthase (complex V). Hence, greater electron flow is required for proton pumping and ATP generation, resulting in a less energetically efficient but more thermogenic mitochondrion. Additionally, by virtue of the greater electron flow in loosely coupled mitochondria, electron carriers retain fewer electrons (remain oxidized), which decreases mitochondrial ROS production. Consequently, mitochondrial coupling efficiency determines the proportion of caloric energy used by the mitochondrion to perform work (ATP generation) versus that used to maintain body temperature (thermogenesis), and its propensity to generate oxidants. Hence, the “trade-off” for being energetically efficient (tightly coupled mitochondria) is increased and decreased capacities in basal $O_2^-$ production and thermogenesis, respectively, whereas increased capacity for thermogenesis results in decreased capacities in basal energy and oxidant production. In this regard, it has been proposed that environmental factors influenced prehistoric human radiation patterns and survival by selecting for aspects of mitochondrial function (ATP production and thermogenesis) [71, 72, 175]. With the development of climate control and excess availability of calories seen in Western societies today, however, these variants in mitochondrial function and genetics may influence an individual’s predisposition toward disease development in that individuals with more tightly coupled mitochondria have increased basal levels of endogenous oxidant stress and thus they will be susceptible to diseases related to oxidative stress, whereas those with loosely coupled mitochondria will be susceptible to diseases of energetic insufficiency.

Evidence supporting this concept has only recently been recognized. In addition to the original studies that have linked mtDNA mutations with human disease, several studies have shown that specific mtDNA mutations and haplotypes are associated with increased risk for diseases thought or known to have an environmental component in humans (e.g., deafness, blindness, Alzheimer’s disease, diabetes, and cancer) [125, 175–190]. Similarly, studies have shown that the mtDNA haplotype can influence tumor growth and age-related deafness [185, 191]. Finally, it has been shown that human longevity significantly cosegregates with mtDNA haplotypes that have temperate and arctic origins [187, 188]. Consequently, it is hypothesized that certain mitochondrial haplotypes that are associated with “cold adaptation” (e.g., less coupled mitochondria) will be associated with increased life span, but increased predilection for clinical illnesses such as blindness and central nervous system defects [72]. Alternatively, mitochondrial haplotypes thought to be associated with tightly coupled mitochondria seem to be more prone to certain types of cancer and neurodegenerative diseases associated with somatic mutation or oxidative stress [72, 175, 185]. Hence, although it is
widely accepted that CVD development is influenced by a combination of genetic, environmental, and behavioral factors that influence an individual’s biological response to known CVD risk factors and although studies have shown such differences occur, in general, they have not provided a clear mechanistic basis or explanation for these observed differences in CVD susceptibility. An important consideration currently lacking from these analyses is the potential role for mitochondria–nuclear interaction that evolved during human prehistory in influencing individual susceptibility to contemporary environmental CVD risk factors.

6 Conclusions

Mitochondria are commonly stereotyped as cellular powerplants; however, they also play critical roles in cell regulation, growth, thermogenesis and apoptosis by generating oxidants that are used in these processes. A common theme among CVD risk factors seems to be mitochondrial damage and dysfunction in the cardiovascular, and moreover, this mitochondrial damage sustained during important developmental stages (e.g. gestation) may significantly increase the risk for adult disease onset (Fig. 10.3). However, perhaps more provocative, it has been suggested that the balance between energy efficiency, oxidant production, and thermogenesis in the mitochondrion that developed during human prehistory has long-term implications for human disease development, susceptibility, and evolution of disease [71, 72, 175]. Consequently, the mitochondrion is a multifunctional organelle, whose primary function is dependent upon the current requirements and environment of the cell. Hence, the primary function of a mitochondrion in an endothelial cell may be the regulated generation of oxidants for cell signaling, whereas within a cardiac myocyte it may be the generation of ATP, or a combination of functions (e.g., ATP and oxidant generation). This unique feature of mitochondrial functional biology potentially makes the mitochondrion a central focal point in terms of the mechanistic basis of many forms of age-related diseases.

Acknowledgements This work was supported by National Institutes of Health grants ES11172, HL77419 and DK79626.

References

52. van Jaarsveld H, Kuyl JM, Alberts DW. Exposure of rats to low concentrations of cigarette smoke increases myocardial sensitivity to ischaemia/reperfusion. Basic Res Cardiol 1992; 87:393–399.


11
Oxidative Stress in Type 2 Diabetes Mellitus

Muhammad A. Abdul-Ghani and Ralph A. DeFronzo

Summary Type 2 diabetes (T2DM) is associated with significant morbidity and mortality, which primarily results from vascular damage. Two major defects contribute to the pathogenesis of T2DM: (1) impaired insulin secretion in response to glucose and other stimuli, i.e., β cell failure; and (2) impaired insulin action in the liver and peripheral (muscle and adipose) tissues, i.e., insulin resistance. In this review, we summarize the molecular mechanisms that contribute to insulin resistance, β cell failure, and vascular damage in T2DM, with emphasis on the contribution of oxidative stress to these mechanisms.

Keywords Type 2 diabetes, β cell, insulin resistance, diabetic complications, oxidative stress.

1 Introduction

The prevalence of type 2 diabetes mellitus has increased progressively to epidemic proportions over the past 20 years. More than 150 million individuals worldwide were affected by the disease in the year 2000, and this number is expected to rise to more than 300 million by the year 2025 [1]. The prevalence of T2DM increases with age, and it is estimated that ~30 million individuals over the age of 65 in developed countries are affected by the disease [1]. Type 2 diabetes is closely associated with obesity, and the epidemic of obesity that we are witnessing has resulted not only in a marked increase in the incidence of diabetes but also in a decrease in the age of the disease onset. Type 2 diabetes, once a rare disease in youth, now is frequently encountered among adolescents and children [2].

Subjects with T2DM have increased morbidity and mortality, the majority of which results from vascular damage, including both microvascular (retinopathy, nephropathy, and neuropathy) and macrovascular (heart attack, stroke, and amputation) complications [3]. Diabetes is the leading cause of blindness and end stage renal disease in westernized countries [4], T2DM individuals have two- to threefold increased risk for cardiovascular disease, e.g., heart attack and stroke. Clinically
significant morbidity often develops before the diagnosis of diabetes is made [5]. Between one third to one half of all people with diabetes have evidence for organ or tissue damage [6]. Although not everyone with diabetes is destined to develop complications, a recent epidemiological study [6] reported that two or more complications are apparent in almost one fifth of people with diabetes.

The increased prevalence of T2DM, together with its associated morbidity and mortality, have placed a heavy burden on the health care system. In the United States, for example, the estimated annual cost for the treatment of diabetes exceeds $100 billion [7]. Therefore, a clear understanding of the pathophysiology of T2DM and the development of strategies to prevent the disease and its complications have important public health and economic implications.

2 Normal Glucose Tolerance

In normal glucose tolerant (NGT) subjects, the plasma glucose concentration during the postabsorptive state (e.g., after an overnight fasting) is maintained below 100 mg/dl. The majority (~70–75%) of the total body glucose uptake (~2 mg/kg min) takes place in insulin-insensitive tissues, mainly the brain, erythrocytes, and splanchnic (gut plus liver) tissues, whereas the remaining 20–25% occurs in insulin-sensitive tissues, primarily muscle [8]. The rate of glucose uptake by all tissues in the body during the postabsorptive state is precisely matched by the rate of endogenous glucose production, primarily by the liver [8] and to a smaller extent by the kidney [9].

After glucose ingestion, the increase in plasma glucose concentration stimulates insulin secretion. The combination of hyperglycemia plus hyperinsulinemia combines to suppress hepatic glucose production and to stimulate glucose uptake by splanchnic and peripheral tissues to dispose of the ingested glucose and restore normoglycemia [10–12]. The rise in plasma glucose concentration after glucose ingestion is influenced both by the ability of hyperinsulinemia and hyperglycemia to suppress endogenous glucose production and to augment the disposal of the ingested glucose by peripheral tissues and the liver. Thus, the maintenance of normal glucose tolerance is dependent on adequate secretion of insulin from the β cells in response to nutrient stimuli and on the normal action of insulin in liver and peripheral tissues.

3 Pathophysiology of T2DM

T2DM subjects manifest two major defects [13]: (1) impaired insulin secretion in response to glucose and other stimuli, i.e., β cell failure; and (2) impaired insulin action in the liver and peripheral (muscle and adipose) tissues, i.e., insulin resistance. Both insulin resistance and β cell failure are present long before the onset of overt
diabetes. The earliest detectable abnormality in glucose metabolism is an increase in insulin resistance in liver, muscle, and other insulin target tissues. Both genetic and environmental factors, e.g., obesity and sedentary lifestyle, contribute to the development of insulin resistance [14] (see Subsection 3.1). In response to insulin resistance, the β cell increases its secretion of insulin under fasting conditions and in response to nutrient stimuli, and this results in hyperinsulinemia. Longitudinal and cross-sectional studies have demonstrated that increased insulin resistance is accompanied by hyperinsulinemia, which initially is sufficient to offset the insulin resistance and maintain normal glucose tolerance [15–17]. Most overweight and obese individuals are insulin resistant, but the majority, ~70%, maintain normal glucose tolerance throughout life due to “healthy” β cells, which are capable of fully compensating for the insulin resistance. However, when the β cells fail to adequately compensate for the insulin resistance, glucose homeostasis deteriorates. Initially, this is manifest as an impaired glucose tolerance and later as overt diabetes [15].

3.1 Insulin Resistance

Insulin is the principal anabolic hormone in the body. It acts on multiple organs to enhance the storage and/or oxidation of substrates [13, 14, 18]. In the liver, insulin inhibits hepatic glucose production and stimulates glycogen synthesis [19]. In skeletal muscle, insulin stimulates glucose uptake by causing the translocation of the GLUT4 glucose transporter from the cytosol to the cell surface membrane and by enhancing glucose oxidation and glycogen synthesis [14, 20]. In adipocytes, insulin stimulates glucose uptake and retards lipolysis by inhibiting hormone-sensitive lipase, thereby restraining the release of free fatty acids (FFA) from adipocytes [21]. The dose-response curve relating plasma insulin concentration and its physiological actions has an ED$_{50}$ of 15–20µU/ml for suppression of lipolysis in adipocytes, 30–40µU/ml for suppression of hepatic glucose production, and 70–80µU/ml for stimulation of glucose uptake in skeletal muscle [21]. During states of insulin resistance, there is an ~2-fold increase in ED$_{50}$ [21]. Initially, the hyperinsulinemia that accompanies the insulin resistance is sufficient to offset the increase in ED$_{50}$ and maintain near normal glucose homeostasis. However, as β cell failure progresses and “relative hypoinsulinemia” ensues, insulin’s multiple actions are disturbed. In adipocytes, this results in impaired inhibition of lipolysis and an increase in plasma FFA concentration. In liver, the suppression of hepatic glucose production by insulin is impaired, whereas in muscle glycogen synthesis and glucose oxidation are reduced, leading to diminished glucose uptake and hyperglycemia. Thus, subjects with type 2 diabetes manifest insulin resistance in multiple organs, e.g., liver, skeletal muscle, and adipocytes, which results in hyperglycemia and elevated plasma FFA levels. Elevated plasma FFA levels cause insulin resistance in muscle and liver and impair insulin secretion.
4 The Insulin Receptor

For insulin to exert its biological effects on glucose metabolism, it must first bind to specific receptors that are present on the cell surface of all insulin target tissues [22]. The insulin receptor is a glycoprotein consisting of two $\alpha$ subunits and two $\beta$ subunits linked by disulfide bonds [22, 23]. The $\alpha$ subunit of the insulin receptor is entirely extracellular and contains the insulin-binding domain. The $\beta$ subunit has an extracellular domain, a transcellular domain, and an intracellular domain that expresses insulin-stimulated kinase activity directed toward its own tyrosine residues [23]. Insulin receptor phosphorylation of the $\beta$ subunit, with subsequent activation of insulin receptor tyrosine kinase, represents the first step in the action of insulin on glucose metabolism [22].

5 Insulin Receptor Signal Transduction

After activation, insulin receptor tyrosine kinase phosphorylates specific intracellular proteins, of which at least nine have been identified [22]. Four of these belong to the family of insulin receptor substrate proteins: IRS-1, IRS-2, IRS-3, and IRS-4 (the others include Shc, Cbl, Gab-1, p60$^{Hok}$, and APS). In muscle, IRS-1 serves as the major docking protein that interacts with the insulin receptor tyrosine kinase and undergoes tyrosine phosphorylation in regions containing amino acid sequence motifs (YXXM or YMXM) that, when phosphorylated, serve as recognition sites for proteins containing src-homology 2 (SH2) domains [22–24]. Mutation of these specific tyrosine residues severely impairs the ability of insulin to stimulate glycogen and deoxyribonucleic acid synthesis, establishing the important role of IRS-1 in insulin signal transduction [25]. In liver, IRS-2 serves as the primary docking protein that undergoes tyrosine phosphorylation and mediates the effect of insulin on hepatic glucose production, gluconeogenesis, and glycogen formation [26].

In muscle, the phosphorylated tyrosine residues on IRS-1 mediate an association with the SH2 domains of the p85-kd regulatory subunit of phosphatidylinositol (PI)-3 kinase, leading to activation of the enzyme [27] PI-3 kinase is a heterodimeric enzyme composed of a p85-kd regulatory subunit and a p110-kd catalytic subunit. The latter catalyzes the 3$^\prime$- phosphorylation of PI, PI-4 phosphate, and PI-4,5 diphosphate, resulting in the stimulation of glucose transport [28]. Activation of PI-3 kinase by phosphorylated IRS-1 also leads to activation of glycogen synthase [22] via a process that involves activation of protein kinase B (PKB)/Akt and subsequent inhibition of kinases such as glycogen synthase kinase 3 [29] and activation of protein phosphatase 1 [30]. Inhibitors of PI-3 kinase impair glucose transport [31] by interfering with the translocation of GLUT4 transporters from their intracellular location [23] and block the activation of glycogen synthase [32] and hexokinase II expression [33].
6 Molecular Mechanism of Insulin Resistance

In insulin resistance states, there is a major defect in the insulin signaling pathway [13]. Reduced insulin-stimulated glucose transport in skeletal muscle is due to a defect in the ability of insulin to activate the insulin receptor and initiate the signal transduction cascade that eventually leads to the mobilization of GLUT4 to the muscle surface membrane [13]. Type 2 diabetic and most obese nondiabetic subjects are insulin resistant. Insulin resistance also can be induced in lean healthy insulin-sensitive individuals by elevating the plasma FFA concentration with lipid infusion. All insulin-resistant states are characterized by a defect in the ability of insulin to increase IRS-1–associated PI 3-kinase activity, and this defect is due to impaired tyrosine phosphorylation of IRS-1 by the insulin receptor [34]. An important mechanism responsible for this insulin-signaling defect is excessive serine phosphorylation of IRS-1. There are >70 potential serine phosphorylation sites on IRS-1 [35–37], and, in general, serine phosphorylation negatively regulates IRS signaling. Recent studies have demonstrated increased serine phosphorylation of IRS-1 on Ser302, Ser307, Ser612, and Ser632 in insulin-resistant rodent models [37–40], and as in lean insulin-resistant offspring of type 2 diabetic parents [41]. Furthermore, high fat diet-induced insulin resistance can be abrogated in rodent models when specific Ser/Thr kinases (c-Jun NH2-terminal kinase [JNK], inhibitor of nuclear factor κB kinase β subunit [IKKβ], S6 kinase 1, and protein kinase C-θ) were either knocked down or pharmacologically inhibited [37, 40–42]. Further evidence for the role of IRS serine phosphorylation in the pathogenesis of insulin resistance comes from studies in which mutation of three key serine residues to alanine in mouse skeletal muscle provided protection against high fat diet-induced insulin resistance in vivo [43]. Collectively, these data indicate that serine phosphorylation on key residues of IRS-1 plays an important role in the pathogenesis of insulin resistance in skeletal muscle.

The intracellular mechanisms responsible for activation of serine kinases is still unclear, but it seems to involve activation of protein kinase C (PKC) [37]. Recent studies have demonstrated that insulin resistance in skeletal muscle caused by lipid infusion is associated with activation of novel PKC isoforms, mainly PKCβ, θ, and δ. Activation of PKC results from increased intracellular levels of “toxic” lipid metabolites, e.g., long-chain fatty acyl CoAs and diacylglycerol [44]. The intramyocellular concentrations of both of these metabolites increase during lipid infusion and fat feeding, and they are known activators of PKC [31]. Serine phosphorylation of IRS also can result from the activation of stress kinases, e.g., JNK and NF-κB. These kinases also are activated by increased intracellular concentrations of lipid metabolites. The important role of these stress kinases in the pathophysiology of insulin resistance is demonstrated by the observation that knocking down these kinases abrogates high fat diet-induced insulin resistance in mice [40, 42].
7 Reactive Oxygen Species (ROS) and Insulin Action

For >30 years, it has been known that hydrogen peroxide and other oxidants exert insulin-like effects. Czech and colleagues reported that generation of hydrogen peroxide from thiols and Cu²⁺ stimulates glucose use and inhibits lipolysis in adipocytes [45]. Latter studies demonstrated that hydrogen peroxide stimulates glucose transport, glycogen synthesis, lipid synthesis, and amino acid transport (reviewed in [46]). In their efforts to elucidate the mechanism of hydrogen peroxide action, Hayes and Lockwood [47] reported that H₂O₂ enhances insulin signaling by increasing insulin receptor tyrosine phosphorylation. This effect of hydrogen peroxide is due to inhibition of tyrosine phosphatase (PTP-1B). During insulin action a burst of hydrogen peroxide, generated via activation of NADPH oxidase, inhibits PTP-1B [48]. The physiological importance of hydrogen peroxide in normal insulin signaling was demonstrated using catalase and inhibitors of NADPH oxidase [49]. Both resulted in reduced insulin-stimulated tyrosine phosphorylation of the insulin receptor and IRS-1.

7.1 Possible Role of Oxidative Stress in Pathogenesis of Insulin Resistance

Although a low steady-state level of ROS is required for normal insulin action, chronic unphysiologic increases in ROS interfere with insulin action and result in insulin resistance [46]. Cross-sectional studies have demonstrated a strong correlation between markers of increased oxidative stress and the severity of insulin resistance in subjects with type 2 diabetes [50, 51]. The correlation between elevated markers of oxidative stress and insulin resistance is not only restricted to diabetes but also is evident in insulin-resistant obese nondiabetic individuals [52] and in subjects with the metabolic syndrome [53, 54]. These observations suggest that increased oxidative stress is an early event that contributes to the pathogenesis of insulin resistance, rather than a consequence of the diabetic environment, e.g., chronic hyperglycemia or elevated plasma FFA levels.

If increased oxidative stress is casually linked to insulin resistance, treatment with antioxidants should improve the defect in insulin action. In vivo studies in experimental animals and small clinical trials in humans have provided support for this concept. Treatment of diabetic rats with α-lipoic acid, a physiological antioxidant, significantly improved insulin sensitivity [55], and small clinical trials have demonstrated that α-lipoic acid ameliorates insulin resistance by ~25% in subjects with T2DM [56, 57]. Other antioxidants, e.g., vitamin C and E and N-acetylcysteine, also have been shown to improve insulin sensitivity in diabetic patients [58, 59].

Further support for a possible role of increased oxidative stress in the pathogenesis of insulin resistance derives from animal and cell culture studies. In cultured hepatoma cells [60], 50µM hydrogen peroxide results in impaired insulin signaling,
due to serine phosphorylation of IRS-1. The insulin resistance caused by hydrogen peroxide is associated with increased JNK and NF-κB activity in hepatoma cells, indicating an important role for these stress kinases in the pathogenesis of insulin resistance. Similarly, hydrogen peroxide has been shown to inhibit insulin action in cultured adipocytes and in skeletal and vascular smooth muscle cells. This effect of hydrogen peroxide is associated with increased NF-κB activity [61–63].

A possible role for endogenous ROS production in the pathogenesis of insulin resistance also is suggested by studies in which the endogenous ROS level was altered by impairing or enhancing the antioxidant defense mechanisms. Pharmacological inhibition of glutathione synthase in rats doubled the plasma concentration of lipid peroxidation products and reduced total glucose disposal in skeletal muscle, measured with the euglycemic insulin clamp [64]. Conversely, antioxidants that alleviate oxidative stress by scavenging ROS have been reported to reduce insulin resistance. α-Lipoic acid, a potent antioxidant, protects muscle cells from the insulin resistance caused by hydrogen peroxide [65], and it augments insulin-stimulated glucose uptake in cultured skeletal muscle cells from diabetic animals and in rat muscle in vitro. In vivo, α-lipoic acid increases total glucose disposal in insulin-resistant Zucker fatty rats. In humans, administration of α-lipoic acid improves glucose metabolism and insulin sensitivity in subjects with T2DM. Treatment with N-acetylcysteine, an antioxidant, prevents hyperglycemia-induced insulin resistance in rats [66]. Collectively, these studies suggest an important role for increased oxidative stress in the development of insulin resistance.

7.2 Molecular Mechanism of Oxidative Stress-Induced Insulin Resistance

As discussed above, impaired tyrosine phosphorylation of IRS-1 consistently has been demonstrated in insulin-resistant individuals. A large body of evidence supports an important role for serine phosphorylation in the impaired tyrosine phosphorylation of insulin signaling molecules. A chronic increase in oxidative stress is a strong activator of stress kinases, e.g., JNK and NF-κB. Increased activity of these kinases has been implicated in development of insulin resistance in multiple animal models [67]. In cultured skeletal muscle cells, H$_2$O$_2$ increases JNK and NF-κB activity and causes insulin resistance. These effects of hydrogen peroxide can be blocked with α-lipoic acid [63], suggesting an important role of these stress kinases in ROS-related insulin resistance.

A second molecular mechanism by which ROS has been shown to cause insulin resistance is related to the production of peroxynitrate. Most of the superoxide produced in cells is converted to hydrogen peroxide by the enzyme superoxide dismutase (SOD). Under conditions of increased cellular superoxide concentration (overproduction or decreased degradation), superoxide interacts with NO to produce peroxynitrate (ONOO$^-$), which can modify proteins by nitrosation of tyrosine residues. Nitrosation of tyrosine residues on insulin signaling molecules is another
mechanism by which increased oxidative stress can cause insulin resistance [68] (Fig. 11.1). In fibroblasts expressing the human insulin receptor, SIN-1, a constitutive producer of peroxynitrate, inhibits insulin signaling and reduces insulin-stimulated glucose transport. The defect in insulin signaling is due to nitrosation of four tyrosine residues in IRS-1, including Tyr 939, which is critical for association of IRS-1 with the p85 subunit of PI-3 kinase [69]. Nitrosation of IRS-1 also has been demonstrated in mice fed a high fat diet and in ob/ob diabetic mice [70]. The results indicate that, at least in experimental animals, nitrosation of IRS-1 leads to the development of insulin resistance.

### 7.3 β Cell Failure

In response to intravenous glucose injection, insulin is secreted from the β cell in a biphasic pattern, with an early burst of insulin release within the first 10 min (first phase insulin secretion) followed by a progressively increasing phase (second phase) of insulin secretion that persist as long as the hyperglycemic stimulus is present [71]. Loss of first phase insulin secretion is a characteristic and early abnormality in patients destined to develop T2DM [17, 72]. The decline in β cell function starts long before diabetes become evident, and the continuing decline in β cell function in subjects with type 2 diabetes contributes to the progressive nature of the disease [73]. Impaired first phase insulin secretion becomes evident when the fasting plasma glucose concentration exceeds 90–95 mg/dl [74]. Similarly, decreased insulin secretion after glucose ingestion, e.g., oral glucose tolerance test, has been
demonstrated when the 2-h plasma glucose concentration exceeds 100 mg/dl [75], a value well within the range considered to represent normal glucose tolerance.

There is considerable debate regarding the etiology of β cell failure: is it secondary to impaired function of a normal number of β cells or to a decrease in the number of β cells. Both functional failure and loss of β cell mass have been demonstrated in subjects with T2DM [75, 76]. Quantitation of β cell mass in T2DM individuals at autopsy has demonstrated a 40–60% reduction compared with age- and body mass index-matched nondiabetic subjects [76]. Furthermore, subjects with T2DM had a three- to 10-fold increase in markers of apoptosis in the remaining beta cells, suggesting that the reduced beta cell mass in diabetic subjects most likely results from increased β cell death [76]. Although these studies clearly demonstrate that accelerated β cell death occurs in T2DM subjects and results in decreased β cell mass, these abnormalities cannot account for the total impairment in insulin secretion observed in T2DM subjects. Functional studies have demonstrated that by the time diabetes is diagnosed ~80% of β cell function has been lost [75]. Therefore, it is likely that functional defects and loss of β cell mass contribute to the progressive β cell failure in T2DM.

Many factors have been shown to contribute to β cell failure [77]. Studies in first degree relatives of type 2 diabetes subjects [78, 79] and in identical twins [80] have provided strong evidence for a genetic basis of β cell failure. Normal-glucose-tolerant offspring of T2DM parents and the NGT twin of an identical diabetic twin pair have a significant reduction in both first and second phase insulin secretion [78–80], indicating that the impairment in insulin secretion begins at the state of normal glucose tolerance.

Acquired factors also contribute to the impairment in β cell function. Glucotoxicity [81] and lipotoxicity [82, 83] are amongst the acquired factors that can lead to impaired insulin secretion.

Although glucose is the principal physiological stimulus for insulin secretion, a chronic increase in the plasma glucose concentration can lead to impaired β cell function. An important role for glucotoxicity is supported by the observation that improved glycemic control, however achieved, leads to enhanced insulin secretion [84, 85]. More direct support for the glucotoxic action of increased plasma glucose concentration on insulin secretion comes from studies in humans and experimental animal in which small increases in the plasma glucose concentration have been shown to impair insulin secretion. In normal healthy subjects, a 50 mg/dl increase in plasma glucose concentration for as short as 90 min obliterates first phase insulin secretion [86]. Similarly, in partially pancreatectomized NGT rats, a 16-mg/dl increment in the mean day-long plasma glucose concentration impairs first phase insulin secretion [87]. Furthermore, correction of chronic hyperglycemia with phlorizin, an inhibitor of renal tubular glucose transport, in partially pancreatectomized diabetic rats restores both the first and second phases of insulin secretion, indicating that in this animal model the reduction in insulin secretion results from chronic hyperglycemia and is reversible upon restoration of normoglycemia [87].

Chronically elevated plasma FFA levels also have been shown to impair β cell function, and this has been referred to as lipotoxicity. Studies in experimental
animals and in humans have demonstrated that short-term, physiologic elevation of the plasma FFA level augments insulin secretion [88]. However, more prolonged exposure of β cell to elevated plasma FFA levels impairs insulin secretion both in vitro and in vivo. When the pancreatic β cell line MIN6 is cultured for 3 days with increasing concentrations of palmitic acid, a dose-dependent decrease in insulin content and glucose-stimulated insulin secretion is observed [89]. Similar deleterious effects of FFA have been demonstrated in pancreatic islets in vitro. Pancreatic islets cultured in the presence of elevated FFA levels manifest reduced insulin gene expression [90, 91] and an increased rate of β cell death [83, 92, 93]. Studies in humans have demonstrated that physiological elevation of the plasma FFA concentration in lean healthy individuals to levels similar to those observed in T2DM subjects (~700–800 µM) impairs both first and second phases insulin secretion, as measured with the hyperglycemic clamp [94]. Two points are worth noting: (1) the physiologic elevation in plasma FFA impaired insulin secretion only in subjects with a strong positive family history of T2DM [94], and (2) the lipotoxic effect on β cell function was markedly enhanced in the presence of hyperglycemia [91, 95]. These observations suggest that multiple factors (genetic and environmental) synergistically interact to promote β cell failure and demonstrate the complexity of mechanisms that lead to β cell demise.

7.4 Cellular Mechanisms of β Cell Failure and Role of ROS

Chronic exposure of the β cell to hyperglycemia has been shown to increase ROS production in islets, mainly via enhancing metabolic flux through the tricarboxylic acid (TCA) cycle and increasing oxidative phosphorylation. Extramitochondrial mechanisms to explain increased ROS generation in the β cell also have been described. These include glyceraldehyde autoxidation, increased flux through the hexosamine pathway, and activation of protein kinase C [96]. The intrinsic level of antioxidant enzymes, e.g., superoxide dismutase and catalase, in the β cell is relatively low compared with other tissues [97]. Thus, conditions which increase ROS generation place the islet at greater risk of oxidative damage by ROS (Fig. 11.2).

Glucose is the principal physiological stimulus for insulin secretion. Glucose must be metabolized by the β cell to increase the ATP concentration, which is the signal that triggers insulin secretion. Chronic hyperglycemia and elevated FFA levels can interfere with normal β cell function via several mechanisms: (1) inhibition of glucose-stimulated insulin secretion (GSIS); (2) inhibition of insulin synthesis; and (3) stimulation of apoptotic pathways, which lead to β cell death. As discussed above, all three of these mechanisms have been reported to contribute to the progressive β cell failure that is characteristic of subjects with T2DM. In vitro and in vivo studies have demonstrated that elevated glucose and FFA concentrations inhibit insulin gene expression and GSIS and accelerate β cell death. In cultured β cell lines and in islets isolated from diabetic animals [98, 99], chronic hyperglycemia inhibits insulin gene expression, leading to decreased insulin
content and impaired insulin secretion. The decrease in insulin synthesis caused by chronic hyperglycemia is due to the loss of two critical proteins, PDX-1 and MafA, that activate the insulin gene promoter. This deleterious effect of hyperglycemia is mediated by generation of ROS in the β cell [100], can be prevented with antioxidants [101], and involves activation of JNK kinase. Dominant-negative JNK overexpression protects against the inhibitory effect of oxidative stress on insulin gene expression [102]. Although glucose is the principal physiological stimulus for insulin secretion, chronic exposure of pancreatic islets to high glucose concentrations impairs GSIS. Because glucose is the major fuel source for ATP production, one would expect elevation of the glucose concentration to increase β cell ATP content and potentiate GSIS. However, measurement of β cell ATP content has revealed reduced ATP levels in response to chronic (as opposed to acute) hyperglycemia. This paradoxical effect of chronic hyperglycemia on β cell ATP production results from overexpression of UCP2 in the β cell [103]. In response to chronic hyperglycemia, increased flux through the TCA cycle increases the mitochondrial redox potential and maximally hyperpolarizes the inner mitochondrial membrane, a situation that markedly increases mitochondrial ROS generation. To protect the mitochondria from increased ROS levels, expression of UCP2 is enhanced and this uncouples the inner mitochondrial membrane, reduces the voltage gradient across the inner mitochondrial membrane, and ameliorates superoxide production. Because the inner mitochondrial membrane potential provides the driving force for ATP synthesis, the decreased in voltage gradient across the inner mitochondrial membrane results in reduced mitochondrial ATP synthesis and impaired GSIS. The important role of UCP2 overexpression in mediating the impaired insulin secretory response after

![Diagram of glucose metabolism](image)  
**Fig. 11.2** Role of increased beta cell ROS production in beta cell failure. Normal mitochondrial ATP production is essential for insulin secretion by the β cell. Increased cellular ROS levels inhibit GAPDH and reduce the flux of metabolites into the mitochondria. Decreased substrate availability impairs ATP generation, which in turn inhibits insulin secretion.
exposure to chronic hyperglycemia has been demonstrated in UCP2 knockout animals. In β cells isolated from UCP2 knockout mice, hyperglycemia caused a marked increase in superoxide production but failed to inhibit GSIS [103]. These results indicate that overproduction of ROS plays a pivotal role in mediating the deleterious action of chronic hyperglycemia on insulin secretion.

Additional support for the important role of accelerated ROS production in mediating the deleterious effect of chronic hyperglycemia on insulin secretion derives from studies using antioxidants that scavenge ROS and ameliorate the oxidative stress in the β cell [104, 105]. Thus, N-acetyl cysteine and astaxanthin prevent the deleterious effects of chronic hyperglycemia on GSIS and insulin synthesis in cultured β cells. In humans, antioxidants improve glycemic control and augment insulin secretion in subjects with T2DM [106]. These observations suggest that ROS overproduction plays an important role in mediating the deleterious effect of chronic hyperglycemia on insulin secretion.

Islets cultured in medium containing high glucose exhibit increased apoptosis, accompanied by decreased expression of the antiapoptotic gene Bcl-xL, overexpression of the proapoptotic genes Bad, Bid, and Bik [107], and overproduction of ROS in the β cell has been implicated in hyperglycemia-induced β cell apoptosis [108, 109].

7.5 Molecular Etiology of Type 2 Diabetic Complications

Vascular endothelium, in large and small vessels, is injured by chronic exposure to hyperglycemia. Because the contribution of oxidative stress to the pathogenesis of atherosclerosis is discussed elsewhere in this book, we limit our discussion to the role of oxidative stress in microvascular complications.

Two landmark studies, the DCCT [110] and the UKPDS [111], unequivocally have documented that control of the plasma glucose concentration in subjects with T2DM markedly reduces the risk of microvascular complications, indicating that chronic exposure of tissues to hyperglycemia triggers pathological processes that lead to organ damage. All cells in the body of T2DM subjects are exposed to chronic hyperglycemia. However, only cells which are unable to efficiently control glucose influx through their plasma membrane, e.g., vascular endothelium of the retina, kidney, and the peripheral nerves are deleteriously affected by hyperglycemia. Intracellular hyperglycemia increases the flux through glycolysis and TCA cycle, resulting in increased mitochondrial NADH levels and increased production of superoxide. Overproduction of ROS in the cell activates a number of metabolic pathways that cause vascular damage and lead to microvascular complications. Four metabolic pathways have been shown to be activated by chronic hyperglycemia, and their activation contributes to vascular damage [112]. (1) Polyol pathway: Aldose reductase is an intracellular enzyme that reduces toxic aldehydes to inactive alcohols. When exposed to increased intracellular glucose concentrations, aldose reductase converts glucose to sorbitol. This process consumes NADH, leading to a reduction
in the intracellular concentration of critical antioxidants, e.g., glutathione, rendering the cell vulnerable to oxidative damage [113]. (2) Intracellular advanced glycated end product (AGE) precursors: AGEs are glycated proteins which originally were thought to originate from the non-enzymatic reaction between extracellular proteins and glucose. However, the rate of AGE generation from intracellular glucose metabolites, e.g., dicarboxyls, is orders of magnitude faster than with glucose itself, and it is now thought that intracellular (and not extracellular) hyperglycemia is the primary initiating event in the formation of both intracellular and extracellular AGEs [114]. AGEs cause cell damage by modification of intracellular proteins, e.g., transcription factors [115], and extracellular and circulating proteins, e.g., matrix molecules and albumin [116]. (3) PKC activation: Intracellular hyperglycemia increases the production of diacylglycerol (DAG) in cultured microvascular cells from the retina and kidney of diabetic animals. The increase in intracellular DAG level results from accelerated synthesis from increased levels of the glycolytic precursor glycerol-3 phosphate. DAG is a strong activator of nine of the 11 isoforms of PKC. Hyperglycemia activates the β and δ subunits of PKC in glomeruli and retinal vascular cells from diabetic animals [117, 118]. Activation of PKC in vascular endothelium impairs endothelial function by decreasing NO synthase, and increasing endothelin 1 and plasminogen activator-1, which lead to endothelial damage [119–123]. (4) Hexosamine pathway activity: Under conditions of increased glycolytic flux, e.g., chronic hyperglycemia, some of the fructose-6 phosphate is converted by the enzyme glutamine:fructose-6 phosphate amidotransferase to glucoseamine-6 phosphate, which then is converted to N-acetyl glucoseamine (GlcNAc). Increased GlcNAc levels modify the structure and expression of cellular proteins, e.g., the transcription factor Sp1, which regulates the expression of PAI-1 [124]. In aortic endothelial cells, hyperglycemia causes a 2.4-fold increase in hexosamine pathway activity, resulting in increased Sp1 O-linked GlcNAc. In cardiomyocytes, hyperglycemia increases nuclear O-GlcNAcylated, leading to impaired calcium cycling [125].

Several lines of evidence suggest that overproduction of mitochondrial ROS is the process that links hyperglycemia to the activation of the four metabolic pathways involved in diabetic complications: (1) Agents that inhibit mitochondrial metabolism, e.g., carbonyl cyanide p-trifluoromethoxyphenylhydrazone, block the production of ROS during hyperglycemic conditions and prevent the activation of PKC, and they inhibit the production of sorbitol, and AGEs in bovine aortic endothelial cells [126]. (2) Overexpression of either UCP2 or Mn-SOD in aortic endothelial cells inhibits hyperglycemia-stimulated production of ROS, prevents the activation of PKC, and inhibits the production of sorbitol and AGEs [126]. (3) In cultured endothelial cells, removal of the electron transport chain by depleting mitochondrial DNA blocks ROS production in response to hyperglycemia and inhibits the ability of hyperglycemia to augment polyol pathway flux, PKC activity, AGE formation, and hexosamine pathway flux [112]. These results suggest that conditions that block the formation of ROS in response to hyperglycemia prevent activation of the metabolic pathways that cause vascular injury.
The mechanism by which overproduction of superoxide activates these metabolic pathways is likely mediated through the inhibition of glyceraldehyde phosphate dehydrogenase (GAPDH [127]). GAPDH is a key glycolytic enzyme that catalyzes the conversion of glyceraldehyde 3-phosphate to 1,3-diphosphoglycerate (Fig. 11.3). GAPDH activity is markedly reduced in diabetic subjects and animals and in cells grown under hyperglycemic conditions. GAPDH activity is highly sensitive to superoxide, and overproduction of superoxide during hyperglycemic conditions inhibits GAPDH activity, leading to the accumulation of upstream glycolytic metabolites (Fig. 11.3), which serve as precursors for the metabolic pathways that initiate the cell damage. Overexpression of UCP2 or Mn-SOD, which blocks hyperglycemia-induced production of ROS, prevents GAPDH inhibition in endothelial cells and prevents the activation of the metabolic pathways involved in cell damage.

Because overproduction of ROS is a key step in hyperglycemia-induced cell injury, one would predict that antioxidants, which inhibit the rise in intracellular ROS levels, would prevent the development of diabetic complications. Indeed, many of the hyperglycemia-induced biological changes, including excess sorbitol production, urinary albumin excretion, and elevated HbA1c levels, can be reduced with antioxidant therapy [128]. Furthermore, antioxidant therapy with α-lipoic acid and vitamins C and E have been favorable effects on blood flow and nerve conduction velocity [129]. However, a large prospective clinical trial with vitamin E failed to show any benefit in preventing vascular complications in diabetic patients [130].

Although the negative results of clinical trials with antioxidants is disappointing, further studies are needed. In these clinical trials, markers of oxidative stress were not examined, and it remains unknown whether the antioxidant treatment actually reduced oxidative stress. Interestingly, reanalysis of the data from one of these

![Fig. 11.3 Role of ROS in diabetic vascular complications. Inhibition of GAPDH by excessive ROS production leads to an increase in the level of upstream metabolites which augment substrate flux into alternative pathways, e.g., aldose reductase and hexosamine, which lead to vascular damage](image-url)
negative studies, HOPE, demonstrated that in the subgroup with haptoglobin 2-2, treatment with vitamin E produced a 55% reduction in the rate of myocardial infarction [131]. Thus, the role of antioxidant therapy in preventing diabetic vascular complications needs further evaluation.

8 Summary and Conclusions

A large amount of data suggests an important role for ROS in the pathogenesis of type 2 diabetes and associated vascular complications. Increased ROS levels impair insulin signaling, leading to insulin resistance, and they inhibit mitochondrial ATP production in β cells, resulting in impaired insulin secretion. Despite the multitude of in vitro studies and in vivo experiments in animal models of diabetes, convincing evidence for an important role of ROS in the pathogenesis of diabetes mellitus still is lacking, and no study convincing has demonstrated an actual increase in ROS production or levels in type 2 diabetic subjects compared with normal healthy individuals. Although the evidence supporting a role of ROS in the development of diabetic vascular complications is more impressive, the results of large clinical trials with antioxidant therapy have been disappointing and raise concern about the role of ROS in the pathogenesis of diabetes and its complications. Several key questions need to be addressed before any conclusions concerning the role of ROS in the pathogenesis of T2DM and diabetic complications can be established: (1) in humans with T2DM, are ROS elevated, and, if so, in which tissues are they elevated; (2) what is the source of the excess ROS production, mitochondrial versus extramitochondrial; thus, physiological ROS production by NADH oxidase seems to be important for normal insulin signaling, whereas overproduction of ROS by mitochondria is toxic and impairs insulin signaling; (3) based upon the prior considerations, more specific antioxidant therapies may be required to achieve positive therapeutic results; (4) levels of ROS and ROS production rates must be monitored in clinical trials assessing the efficacy of antioxidant therapies to ensure that excess ROS production truly has been inhibited; moreover, although prevention of excess production of ROS may be beneficial, complete inhibition of ROS production may interfere with normal cell signaling and physiologic function.

References


11 Oxidative Stress in Diabetes


122. Studer RK, Craven PA, Derubertis FR. Role for protein kinase C in the mediation of increased fibronectin accumulation by mesangial cells grown in high-glucose medium. Diabetes 1993;42:118–126.


Summary  Cancer cells have undergone several distinct transformational events leading to alterations of the normal growth and proliferation regulatory pathways. The probabilities of these events are increased by agents that damage and mutate DNA. It is now well established that oxygen is one such mutagen. Within the cell, the metabolic conversion of oxygen to reactive forms, particularly the hydroxyl radical, is an initial step in this process. Hydroxyl radical-mediated oxidative damage to DNA results in a variety of mutagenic lesions. However, this is a normal occurrence in every cell, and a host of proteins is involved in surveillance of the genome and removal of the damage. The link between DNA oxidative damage and cancer is evident from animal models lacking these DNA repair and antioxidant proteins. Mice deficient in repair of DNA oxidative damage or reactive oxygen species (ROS) detoxification typically are susceptible to cancer. Mitochondria, as a major source of intracellular ROS, and organelles essential for the maintenance of metabolic homeostasis, can also play critical roles in the initiation and promotion of cancer. Important mechanistic details of mitochondrial participation in tumorigenesis have recently been uncovered.

Keywords  Reactive oxygen species (ROS), DNA repair, base excision repair (BER), 8-oxodG, oxidative damage, mitochondria, cancer, mutation, mitochondrial DNA (mtDNA).

1 Introduction

Ageing and cancer are closely related biological phenomena, both linked to oxygen free radicals and the progressive loss of genomic fidelity (Fig. 12.1; [1]). Most human premature ageing disorders (progeria) involve defects in the repair of DNA lesions, and many of these are characterized also by increased incidence of spontaneous tumors [1, 2]. By contrast, it is generally thought that longer lived animals have more robust DNA repair activities that allow them to avoid carcinogenesis for longer. Thus, DNA is considered one of the more important targets of intracellular
reactive oxygen species (ROS), with cellular transformation and tumorigenesis being possible outcomes of DNA damage. Here, we outline the evidence that endogenously produced ROS is sufficient to elicit carcinogenesis in mammals. We briefly describe the chemistry and biology of some common oxidative DNA modifications and their repair. We then discuss experimental results implicating deficient DNA repair and aberrant mitochondrial respiration in cancer.

2 Oxygen, Reactive Oxygen, and Cancer

The participation of oxygen in DNA damage, mutation, genomic instability, cellular senescence, and transformation has been demonstrated in mouse embryonic fibroblasts (MEFs) [3]. Generally, fibroblasts growing under standard culture conditions (atmospheric oxygen levels) are actually hyperoxic relative to their environment in vivo (~170 mmHg, versus approximately 30 mmHg in vivo; [4]). By mass action, this abundance of oxygen increases the rate of metabolic superoxide production [5]. MEFs grown under these conditions accumulate DNA mutations and gross chromosomal rearrangements [6]. Within 13 population doublings, the MEFs senesce, followed by the random transformation of some cells, which then multiply indefinitely and take over the culture. A single, simple manipulation, decreasing the oxygen concentration at which the cells are grown to more physiologically relevant levels, is sufficient to reduce mutation accumulation, prevent transformation, and prolong the replicative life span of MEFs indefinitely. This highlights the central role of oxygen in cellular transformation. That this phenomenon is mediated directly by ROS is indicated by experiments such as those of Suh et al. [7], in which

![Fig. 12.1](image1.png)

**Fig. 12.1** Ageing and cancer. In both mouse and human ageing, mortality and the incidence of cancer are highly correlated (modified from [1]).
the catalytic subunit of the superoxide-generating enzyme NADPH oxidase (Mox1) was overexpressed in NIH3T3 cells. This manipulation increased intracellular superoxide production, which of itself was sufficient to produce a transformed phenotype. When transformed cells were implanted into immunodeficient nude mice, they developed into tumors. The above-mentioned results together support the connection between oxygen, ROS, and cancer. However, in both instances, the levels of oxygen that cells were exposed to in culture were well above physiologically normal levels. It is important to consider whether animal cells produce enough ROS endogenously to elicit similar effects.

This question has been addressed using superoxide dismutase (SOD) gene knockout mice, in which oxygen levels are normal, but the ability to detoxify metabolic superoxide is compromised. Mice null for the mitochondrial SOD (manganese SOD; MnSOD) gene are either not viable [8] or they live for <1 month [9], at which time death results from massive oxidative damage in highly metabolic tissues, particularly heart and brain. However, mice containing a single copy of the MnSOD gene, surprisingly, have normal life spans [10]. MnSOD activity in the major organs (liver, heart, brain, and kidney) of the heterozygotes is reduced to approximately 50% of wild type. These mice therefore provide a useful model to investigate the relationship between mitochondrial ROS metabolism and carcinogenesis. The heterozygotes accumulate higher levels of DNA oxidative damage in both mitochondrial and nuclear DNA of most tissues by 26 months, and they have an increased incidence of tumor formation, particularly lymphomas. This evidence from MnSOD+/− mice supports the idea that normal levels of mitochondrial superoxide production are sufficient to induce carcinogenesis.

Evidence from mice deficient in cytosolic SOD activity (CuZnSOD−/−) also indicates that endogenous ROS production is sufficient to induce tumor formation [11]. Although disruption of CuZnSOD is less acutely lethal than MnSOD, CuZnSOD−/− mice have significantly reduced life spans (25 months maximum life span vs 36 months for wild type) and higher levels of cellular, including DNA, oxidative damage. Increased incidence of cancer is observed in these mice, but, interestingly, only hepatocarcinomas. This is coincident with elevated levels of protein and lipid oxidative damage and near-complete inactivation of the cytosolic isoform of aconitase, indicating massive cytosolic oxidative stress. The absence of cancers in other tissues of the CuZnSOD−/− mouse is perhaps surprising. However, this could be related to the fact that CuZnSOD activity in wild-type mice is 10-fold higher in liver than in other highly oxidative tissues, which may reflect its particular importance in hepatocytes, which are the sites of extensive xenobiotic metabolism.

Thus, the evidence from the SOD knockout mouse models indicates that endogenously produced superoxide is sufficient to promote tumorigenesis in vivo. However, a complication in interpreting results from these mice is that altered ROS metabolism results in indiscriminate oxidative damage to all cellular macromolecules, including lipid, protein, and DNA. The outcome of this cumulative damage includes dramatic and broad reductions in enzymatic and mitochondrial function [12]. Therefore, although DNA oxidative damage certainly occurs in these experimental models, it may not be the proximal cause of carcinogenesis. Rather, establishing a
direct link among endogenous ROS production, DNA oxidative damage, and carcinogenesis requires an experimental approach that specifically targets genes whose products repair ROS-mediated damage. In these experimental models, endogenous ROS production is not itself manipulated, so that levels of protein and lipid oxidation remain unaltered, but the ability to repair DNA oxidative damage is removed. This approach has allowed for a very specific examination of how the accumulation of DNA oxidative damage influences cancer susceptibility.

3 ROS-Mediated DNA Damage

The various reactions of ROS with DNA have been comprehensively reviewed [13]. A variety of base and sugar backbone modifications has been described, although by far most experimental attention has focused on 8-hydroxy-7,8-deoxyguanine (8-oxodG). Many of the resultant DNA adducts, including 8-oxodG, are highly mutagenic, and some also interfere with replication and/or transcription.

Hydroxyl radical (HO·), generated by Fe²⁺ catalyzed reactions with superoxide and hydrogen peroxide (Fenton reactions), is the strongest oxidant amongst the endogenous ROS, and it is this species that directly mediates most DNA damage [13]. Attack by HO· of the C8-position of guanine leads to formation of 8-hydroxyguanine. Similarly, 8-hydroxyadenine can be formed from HO· attack of adenine. Hydroxyl radical also can add to the C5- and C6-positions of thymine, initiating a series of oxidative reactions that can result in formation of thymine glycol. Furthermore, reaction of HO· with the sugar moiety of DNA can lead to formation of abasic sites and strand breaks. All of these base modifications, and abasic sites, are substrates for DNA repair pathways, and dozens of nuclear proteins participate in surveillance and repair of genomic DNA (reviewed in [14]).

Nucleotide pools are vulnerable to oxidative reactions, and HO· also can modify unincorporated nucleotide triphosphates prior to their incorporation into DNA (reviewed in [15]). Thus, 8-hydroxy-7,8-deoxyguanine triphosphate (8-oxodGTP) can represent a significant proportion of the overall dGTP pool under highly oxidative conditions, and its incorporation into DNA in place of dGTP is mutagenic, leading to G:C to T:A transversions.

4 8-OxodG and Cancer

8-oxodG is by far the most studied form of oxidative damage in DNA, thought to represent 5% of all oxidative lesions, making it perhaps the most common oxidative base modification [13]. 8-oxodG is a premutagenic lesion, and it is frequently mispaired with adenine during DNA replication [16]. Several enzymes act to minimize the mutagenic potential of 8-oxodG. First, 8-oxodGTP formed in nucleotide pools is eliminated by the enzyme mut T homologue (MTH1; named from the bacterial
mut T), which hydrolyzes 8-oxodGTP to 8-oxodGMP, thus preventing incorporation of the former into DNA. Second, 8-oxodG formed opposite cytosine within DNA is excised by oxoguanine DNA glycosylase (OGG1), which initiates strand repair via the base excision repair (BER) pathway (Fig. 12.2). Third, un repaired 8-oxodG can promote mispairing with adenine during replication, resulting in 8-oxodG:A mispairs and subsequent G:C to T:A transversions [16]. The enzyme mut Y homologue (MYH) catalyzes removal of adenine from these mispairs; thus, it works to counteract the mutagenicity of 8-oxodG.

These three enzymes, MTH1, OGG1, and MYH, have all been studied by targeted gene disruption in mice, allowing their association with cancer to be investigated (Table 12.1). Disruption of the Mth1 gene increases the spontaneous mutation rate in embryonic stem cells approximately 2-fold [17]. In Mth1−/− mice, an increased incidence of multiple tumors is found in lung, liver, and stomach (Table 12.1), in the absence of exogenous stressors. These results demonstrate that the ability of MTH1 to prevent mutagenesis from endogenous 8-oxodG formation suppresses tumor formation, a result that directly links 8-oxodG to cancer susceptibility in mice.

**Fig. 12.2** Oxidative damage, base excision repair and carcinogenesis. 8-oxodG is the most common oxidative base lesion. Cells possess various repair mechanisms that counter the mutagenicity of this lesion. MTH1 acts to sanitize the dNTP pool by hydrolyzing 8-oxodGTP to 8-oxodGMP, thereby reducing misincorporation of modified deoxynucleotide triphosphates into the DNA strand. 8-oxodG formed within DNA is excised by Ogg1. 8-oxodG-adenine mispairs are recognized by MYH, which removes the adenines, followed by repair. The removal of a base, such as 8-oxodG, results in formation of an AP site, which is processed by APE1, an enzyme in the BER pathway. Polβ then incorporates the correct nucleotide and the nicked backbone is sealed with ligase. Shown in text boxes are the effects of gene deletion, mutation or overexpression
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Enzyme</th>
<th>Treatment</th>
<th>Target</th>
<th>Phenotype</th>
<th>Mouse age</th>
<th>Localization</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>8-oxodG</td>
<td>Mth1&lt;sup&gt;−/−&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>Lung</td>
<td>2-fold increase in mutation rate</td>
<td>82 weeks</td>
<td>Nuc/Mito</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Lung tumors</td>
<td>82 weeks</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Ogg1&lt;sup&gt;−/−&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>Lung</td>
<td>1.7-fold increase in 8-oxodG (liver nDNA)</td>
<td>13–15 weeks</td>
<td>Nuc/Mito</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>No tumors</td>
<td>32–44 weeks</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Ogg1&lt;sup&gt;−/−&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>None</td>
<td></td>
<td>4.2-fold increase in 8-oxodG (liver DNA)</td>
<td>9–14 weeks</td>
<td>Nuc/Mito</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>No tumors</td>
<td>50 weeks</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Ogg1&lt;sup&gt;−/−&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>KBrO&lt;sub&gt;3&lt;/sub&gt;</td>
<td>Kidney</td>
<td>250-fold increase in 8-oxodG (kidney DNA)</td>
<td>52 weeks</td>
<td>Nuc/Mito</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>No tumors</td>
<td>52 weeks</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Ogg1&lt;sup&gt;−/−&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>UVB light</td>
<td>Skin</td>
<td>Squamous cell carcinomas, sarcomas</td>
<td>30–44 weeks</td>
<td>Nuc/Mito</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Myh&lt;sup&gt;−/−&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>ES cell</td>
<td>2-fold increase in mutation rate</td>
<td>16–64 weeks</td>
<td>Nuc/Mito</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Myh/Ogg&lt;sup&gt;−/−&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>Lung</td>
<td>3-4 fold increase in 8-oxodG (lung, small intestine)</td>
<td>52–72 weeks</td>
<td>Nuc/Mito</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Lymphomas, tumors in lung, small intestine</td>
<td>52–72 weeks</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BER</td>
<td>Ape&lt;sup&gt;−/−&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>Blastocyes</td>
<td>Embryonic lethal</td>
<td>E7.5</td>
<td>Nuc/Mito</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>IR</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Increased cell loss</td>
<td>E3.5</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Ape&lt;sup&gt;−/+&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>Neurons/MEFs</td>
<td>Lymphomas</td>
<td>E18.5</td>
<td>Nuc</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Parauat/medaniae</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Decreased cell survival</td>
<td>Nuc</td>
<td>[30]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pol&lt;sup&gt;−/−&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>Embryonic lethal</td>
<td>E18.5</td>
<td>Nuc</td>
<td>[29]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pol&lt;sup&gt;−/+&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>higher incidence and earlier onset of lymphomas and adenocarcinomas</td>
<td>104–112 weeks</td>
<td>Nuc</td>
<td>[41]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pol&lt;sup&gt;−/+&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>C127 MEFs</td>
<td>Induce focus formation and anchorage independent growth (transformation)</td>
<td>Nuc</td>
<td>[38]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pol&lt;sup&gt;−/+&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>LN12 MEFs</td>
<td>2.5-fold increase in mutation frequency</td>
<td>Nuc</td>
<td>[37]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pol&lt;sup&gt;−/+&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>Fen1&lt;sup&gt;−/−&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>Embryonic lethal</td>
<td>E2.5–E4.5</td>
<td>Nuc</td>
<td>[77]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Fen1&lt;sup&gt;−/+&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>IR</td>
<td>Blastocyes</td>
<td>Increased apoptosis</td>
<td>E3.5</td>
<td>Nuc</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Fen1&lt;sup&gt;−/+&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>Non-hodgkins lymphoma B cell type</td>
<td>Nuc</td>
<td>[78]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pol&lt;sup&gt;−/+&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>D407A</td>
<td>Lymphomas and carcinomas</td>
<td>8 weeks</td>
<td>Nuc</td>
<td>[79]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pol&lt;sup&gt;−/+&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>D400A</td>
<td>Lymphomas and carcinomas</td>
<td>76 weeks</td>
<td>Nuc</td>
<td>[80]</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Ogg1, oxo-8dG DNA glycosylase; BER, base excision repair; Mth1, Mut T homolog; Myh, Mut Y homologue; APE, apurinic/apyrimidinic endonuclease; FEN1, flap endonuclease; IR, ionizing radiation; MEFs, mouse embryonic fibroblasts; ES cell, embryonic stem cell; Nuc, nuclear; Mito, mitochondrial.
Surprisingly, in the majority of Ogg1–/– mice produced, susceptibility to cancer has typically not been associated with the absence of OGG1 activity in mice [18–20], although in a single study Hirano et al. [21] provide evidence for elevated incidence of lung tumors (Table 12.1). The elevation of 8-oxodG levels in nuclear DNA of Ogg1–/– mice is approximately 2-fold, and the mutation rate is increased by a similar amount. Even chronic treatment of Ogg1–/– mice with the exogenous oxidative stressor KBrO3, which in one experiment increased 8-oxodG levels in kidney DNA by 75-fold, did not induce tumor development [20, 22]. Conversely, Kunisada et al. [23] reported an increase in 8-oxodG and skin cancer in Ogg1–/– mice exposed to UVB radiation, which induces ROS. Also, Ogg1 mutations have been identified as risk factors for developing lung cancer in humans [24]. Thus, there may be important differences between OGG1 function in mice and humans, and perhaps an interaction with genetic background.

One possible explanation for the absence of phenotype in most of the Ogg1–/– mice is that MYH activity provides an efficient backup, removing most adenines from 8-oxodG:A mispairs formed in DNA (Fig. 12.1). To investigate this possibility, Ogg1–/–Myh–/– mice were developed. Although Myh gene disruption alone has no effect on tumorigenesis in mice [25], simultaneous disruption of both Ogg1 and Myh significantly increases levels of 8-oxodG in liver, lung, and small intestine (although not in brain, kidney, or spleen), and increased the incidence of tumors, including lung adenomas, lymphomas, and cancers of the reproductive system (Table 12.1). Ogg1–/–Myh–/– mice had significantly reduced life spans. Perhaps most interesting, however, was that G-to-T transversions in Ogg1–/–Myh–/– mice activated the \( \text{K-ras} \) oncogene, which is also often mutated in human lung tumors [25]. This suggests a direct pathway whereby 8-oxodG-induced mutation of an oncogene promotes carcinogenesis. In humans, mutations in Myh alone are sufficient to promote cancer. Heritable Myh mutations are associated with colorectal adenomatous polyposis. As in the Ogg1–/–Myh–/– mouse, an activating G-to-T transversion is commonly observed in the \( \text{K-ras} \) oncogene of these tumors [26].

5 DNA Base Excision Repair and Cancer

In addition to 8-oxodG, numerous other base modifications occur in DNA due to the persistent attack of endogenously produced ROS. Of these, a majority (including 8-oxodG) are repaired by the BER pathway (Fig. 12.2), which is itself considered a tumor suppressor mechanism [27]. In its simplest form, BER includes five sequential steps: (1) recognition and removal of damaged bases, (2) incision of the resultant abasic sites, (3) processing the intermediate DNA ends, (4) DNA synthesis, and (5) ligation. In addition to repair of oxidatively damaged bases, the BER pathway participates in repair of abasic sites and single-strand breaks [14]. BER is divided into two subpathways, short-patch and long-patch, based on the number of nucleotides excised and replaced. Common to both BER subpathways are a number of DNA glycosylases, of which OGG1 is one. Glycosylase activity generates an
apurinic/apyrimidinic (AP) site, which is subsequently processed by AP endonuclease (APE1), after which the dedicated DNA polymerase β (polβ) adds nucleotides as required. In the long-patch pathway (not shown in Fig. 12.2), additional DNA polymerases and other enzymes further extend the repair patch before ligation, whereas in short-patch BER polβ repair synthesis is followed immediately by ligation to restore the DNA strand.

The relationship of BER to cancer susceptibility has been studied in a number of mouse models in which individual BER genes have been targeted for disruption. Deletion of many BER genes is incompatible with mammalian life, and this is true for both Ape1 and polβ (Table 12.1) [28, 29]. However, two research groups have characterized Ape1+/– mice [30, 31]. These mice show evidence of oxidative stress, and they have increased spontaneous mutation rates. Tumor susceptibility in these mice has not been extensively documented, although Meira et al. [30] suggest increased incidence of several tumors in a small-scale study (Table 12.1). Also, interpretation of the role of APE1 deficiency in cancer is complicated by the fact that this protein has functions other than in BER, including its role as a redox-regulated transcription factor [32]. In addition, an APE1-independent pathway of BER involving Nei-like (NEIL) proteins 1 and 2 has been described (reviewed in [33]). This alternative pathway nonetheless requires polβ, an enzyme that plays a critical role in oxidative damage repair.

polβ is a particularly good experimental target for understanding the significance of oxidative DNA lesions in cancer susceptibility. This enzyme has no role in DNA replication, but rather it is a dedicated repair polymerase. It plays a critical role in nuclear BER, with perhaps all BER-catalyzed repair of oxidative DNA damage requiring its participation. Oxidative lesions requiring polβ-mediated repair have been estimated to be up to 100,000 per cell per day [34]. Also, in addition to its nucleotide incorporation activity, polβ catalyzes the deoxyribose phosphate (dRP) lyase reaction that is thought to be the “rate-limiting” step in BER [35]. Approximately 30% of all human tumors express mutant forms of DNA polβ [36], suggesting that somatic mutation of this gene is linked to cancer. This idea is supported by experiments demonstrating that expression of common mutants of polβ in mammalian cell lines induces mutagenesis and cellular transformation ([37, 38]; Table 12.1). For example, the K289M mutation produces a highly mutagenic polβ, in which both affinity for gapped DNA and base-pairing fidelity are compromised. Expression of the K289M polβ variant in mouse LN12 cells (twofold relative to wild type) results in a 2.5-fold increase in mutation frequency [37]. In a separate study, expression of either the I260M or K289M polβ mutants (1.5-fold relative to wild type) in mouse C127 cells induced transformation, although this was not observed when wild-type polβ was overexpressed at a similar level [38]. These results suggest that aberrant activities of mutant polβ cause mutagenesis and cellular transformation. However, it should be noted that other authors have found the BER pathway highly sensitive to overall polβ activity. In an in vitro assay measuring nucleotide incorporation, overexpression of wild-type polβ activity (sixfold) induced frameshift mutations [39]. Similarly, Bergoglio et al. [40] showed that overexpression of wild-type polβ (between 2.4- and 4.5-fold) in Chinese hamster
ovary cells promoted tumorigenesis when these cells were injected into nude mice. Underexpression of polβ, as in haploinsufficient polβ mice, is also associated with increased cancer incidence, including carcinomas and lymphomas [41]. Together, these results indicate how any perturbation of native polβ activity promotes mutagenesis and cancer, suggesting that this activity is particularly critical. By implication, this also directly links the inability to efficiently repair DNA oxidative lesions arising from endogenous ROS to cancer.

Long patch BER, which requires the participation of additional enzymes, including flap endonuclease 1 (FEN1) and polymerase δ, also is implicated in oxidative damage repair and therefore tumor suppression ([14]; Table 12.1). Similarly, deficient repair of both single and double-strand breaks is carcinogenic. However, because the proteins involved in these repair pathways participate in numerous other DNA transactions, including replication, directly relating their deficiencies to ROS-mediated damage repair is less straightforward.

6 Mitochondria, ROS, and Cancer

Given the link between DNA oxidative damage and cancer, it seems intuitive that mitochondria, as the major source of ROS in most animal cells, should play a role in carcinogenesis. At least three distinct mechanisms for mitochondrial participation in carcinogenesis can be identified: (1) the mutagenicity of respiratory ROS, (2) the mitogenic potential of respiratory ROS, and (3) the interaction of mitochondrial dysfunction with intracellular signaling pathways (including apoptosis). Indeed, there is evidence for all three modes of action.

The general link between dysregulated mitochondrial ROS metabolism and carcinogenesis has been made in MnSOD+/− mice [42]. Similarly, mitochondrial dysfunction leading to genomic instability can be reversed with an antioxidant (N-acetyl cysteine) in mouse one-cell zygotes, suggesting that aberrant mitochondrial ROS metabolism is responsible for this phenotype [43]. These results indicate a causal role for mitochondrial ROS in cancer. Because ROS are both mutagens and mitogens, the participation of mitochondria in cancer might include contribution to both initiation and promotion events. Consistent with the latter role, overexpression of MnSOD in cancerous cells (which often underexpress MnSOD) significantly inhibits their growth [44], suggesting that mitochondrial superoxide plays an important mitogenic role. Similarly, a T8993G mutation of the ATP6 subunit of mitochondrial ATP synthase inhibits oxidative phosphorylation, increases intracellular oxidative stress, and alters apoptotic signaling pathways. Cybrid cells containing these mutant mitochondria produce highly aggressive tumors upon injection into nude mice [45, 46]. These results demonstrate the ability of aberrant mitochondrial function to promote dysregulated cell growth.

Several inherited respiratory disorders shed light on some of the specific mechanisms by which mitochondrial dysfunction can promote carcinogenesis. For example, heterozygous mutations in three of the four nuclear genes (SDHB, SDHC, SDHD)
encoding subunits of respiratory complex II (succinate dehydrogenase) have been linked with development of paragangliomas and phaeochromocytomas [47–49]. These mutations prevent assembly of a functional complex II, and they increase mitochondrial ROS production [50]. Although these results are consistent with a straightforward ROS-mediated mechanism of cancer initiation, Selak et al. [51] have shown how a second mechanism is likely to contribute to the progression of these cancers. The metabolic alterations resulting from absence of competent respiratory complex II induce a stabilization of hypoxia inducible factor-1α (HIF-1α) in the SDHC mutant cells, via succinate inhibition of prolyl-hydroxylase (PHD) (Fig. 12.3).

Fig. 12.3 Mitochondria and cancer. Shown are three mechanisms whereby mitochondria seem to contribute to carcinogenesis. (1) Mitochondria are the main source of ROS in many cells, and increased ROS production and associated oxidative lesions have been associated with tumorigenesis. Mitochondrial ROS damage both mitochondrial (represented as small circles) and nuclear DNA. (2) Defects in the nuclear-encoded complex II (shown as circled and struck) of the electron transport chain are associated with cancer and the Warburg effect. The accumulation of succinate inhibits the activity of PHD by product inhibition. This blocks the PHD-catalyzed hydroxylation of HIF-1α and subsequent VHL factor-mediated degradation. Therefore, even under normoxic conditions, HIF-1α accumulates and forms an active transcriptional complex with HIF-1β, increasing the transcription of enzymes associated with glycolysis and angiogenesis. This contributes to the Warburg effect, i.e., the increased reliance of cancer cells on aerobic glycolysis. (3) Mitochondria from cancer cells can be resistant to the induction of outer membrane permeabilization and thus release of apoptotic factors.
HIF-1α, normally stabilized only under hypoxic conditions, is thus persistent under normoxic conditions. A similarly stabilization of HIF-1α under normoxia also is seen in other cancers (e.g., leiomyoma, leiomyosarcoma). Normally, Von Hippel Lindau (VHL) protein is involved in the rapid degradation of HIF-1α under normoxia [52]. In some cancers, however, such as clear cell renal carcinomas, VHL is dysfunctional and therefore unable to direct the degradation of HIF-1α. Stabilized HIF-1α binds HIF-1β to form a heterodimer that promotes transcription of approximately 100 genes, many of which are involved in glycolysis and angiogenesis, which are permissive of rapid tumor growth. These observations may offer an explanation for the “Warburg effect,” i.e., the reliance of cancerous cells on incomplete oxidation of glucose to lactate even under normoxic conditions [53, 54]. Indeed, HIF-1α also is reported to be stabilized by mitochondrial ROS [55], suggesting multiple mechanisms by which aberrant mitochondrial metabolism could alter a putatively hypoxia-related gene transcriptional program. Interestingly, a second nuclear-encoded mitochondrial enzyme, fumarase, has been linked to tumorigenesis by a similar mechanism [56], suggesting that HIF-1α stabilization via dysfunctional oxidative phosphorylation might be a pathway common to many different cancers.

An important question in understanding a potential mitochondrial connection in cancer concerns whether random mitochondrial DNA (mtDNA) mutations in somatic cells can similarly promote cellular transformation. A high proportion of human cancers contain mtDNA homoplasmic for mutations that are absent in both germline cells and surrounding tissue cells [57]. Although some of these mutations are apparently innocuous or have even been erroneously identified [58], it remains the case that (1) a high proportion of cancers harbor homoplasmic mtDNA mutations, and (2) there is an apparent selection of mutant mtDNAs during the transformation process. However, the development of homoplasmy could occur through essentially random events [59], particularly in cells that are no longer as reliant on oxidative phosphorylation, in which case there may be little selective pressure to maintain wild-type mtDNA. Two experimental models provide the means to test whether random mtDNA mutations in somatic cells can cause cancer: mtDNA mutator mice [60, 61] and Ogg1−/− mice. In the former model, two groups have engineered mice with a defective polγ proofreading domain that accumulate mtDNA mutations in somatic cells at a greatly accelerated rate. Although these mice do evidence mitochondrial respiratory dysfunction and have greatly reduced life spans, there is no documented increase in the incidence of either oxidative stress or cancer [62]. Similarly, in the second experimental model, Ogg1−/− mice accumulate 8-oxodG in liver mtDNA to levels 20-fold higher than in wild-type mice [63], but they show no evidence of mitochondrial dysfunction or oxidative stress [64] and they are not cancer-prone.

mtDNA sustains high levels of oxidative damage in all mammalian cells, but despite frequent assertions to the contrary, repair of mtDNA oxidative damage is relatively efficient, if of limited scope (reviewed in [65]). Mammalian mitochondria possess a short-patch BER pathway. Several of the short-patch nuclear BER enzymes that function in the nucleus also localize to mitochondria, including OGG1 and APE1. MTH1 and MYH also are found in mitochondria [66, 67], which could explain the absence of effect of Ogg1 gene disruption on mitochondrial function.
It will therefore be interesting to investigate mitochondrial function/dysfunction in the Ogg1+/Myh+/ mice, which do develop cancer. Thus, there is strong evidence for mitochondrial involvement in both the initiation and promotion stages of cancer, and some of the specific molecular mechanisms connecting aberrant function and tumorigenesis have been elucidated (Fig. 12.3).

7 Conclusions

Genetically modified mice have proved invaluable tools for relating the intracellular production of oxygen radicals to carcinogenesis in mammals. Endogenous ROS production, via mitochondrial oxidative metabolism or cytosolic enzymes, provides both a source of mutagen and a potential mitogen in mammalian cells. Direct oxidative damage of DNA, via the hydroxyl radical in particular, is one means by which endogenous ROS exert their mutagenic effects. The detrimental effects of endogenous ROS are normally efficiently countered by DNA repair enzymes that remove mutagenic oxidative lesions or antioxidant enzymes that prevent them from forming. However, perturbations that compromise repair or increase mitochondrial ROS production will upset this balance and thus create an intracellular milieu that is permissive of carcinogenesis.

This general scheme is supported by a number of complementary studies done with calorie-restricted (CR) mammals. CR is a well characterized experimental model in which reduced energy intake confers enhanced longevity and resistance to cancer in most mammals (reviewed in [68]). It seems to affect many of the same molecular targets identified in genetically modified mice. In mice and rats, CR reduces mitochondrial ROS production [69–71], enhances endogenous antioxidant defenses [72] and stimulates nuclear BER activity [73] via induction of polβ [74]. These adjustments are accompanied by a significant decrease in the level of 8-oxodG in both nuclear and mitochondrial DNA of CR mice [75]. Based on the findings outlined above, it can be concluded that these responses must contribute directly to the cancer resistance of CR mice.

The findings with respect to ROS and cancer incidence are readily integrated into Harman’s free radical theory of ageing. Cancer-related mortality is one determinant of life span in mammals. Indeed, the cancer susceptibility of antioxidant and DNA repair-deficient mice can be viewed as a case study within Harman’s theory, illustrating both the stochastic nature of the process of free radical-mediated cellular dysfunction and the increased probability of such dysfunction that is associated with aberrant ROS metabolism.

References

15. Nakabeppu Y, Kajitani K, Sakamoto K, Yamaguchi H, Tsuchimoto D. MTH1, an oxidized purine nucleoside triphosphatase, prevents the cytotoxicity and neurotoxicity of oxidized purine nucleotides. DNA Repair 2006; 5:761–772.
20. Arai T, Kelly VP, Minowa O, Noda T, Nishimura S. The study using wild-type and Ogg1 knockout mice exposed to potassium bromate shows no tumor induction despite an extensive accumulation of 8-hydroxyguanine in kidney DNA. Toxicology 2006; 221:179–186.


13
Oxidative Stress in Hypertension

Sean P. Didion, Sophocles Chrissobolis, and Frank M. Faraci

Summary  Oxidative stress refers to increases in reactive metabolites of molecular oxygen that occur as a result of increases in formation and/or reductions in scavenging or degradation. Oxidative stress plays an important role in the pathogenesis of hypertension. In this chapter, we examine the relationship between oxidative stress in the development and maintenance of hypertension and changes in vascular structure and function. We focus primarily on enzymatic systems that contribute to oxidative stress, such as NAD(P)H oxidase, and those that limit oxidative stress, including superoxide dismutase, glutathione peroxidase, and catalase.

Keywords  NAD(P)H oxidase, superoxide dismutase, glutathione peroxidase, catalase.

1  Introduction

Since the discovery of free radicals in biological tissue more than a half a century ago [1], much effort has focused on understanding the role of such radicals in vascular biology and disease, including hypertension. Free radicals, as defined by their chemical nature, refer to molecules with an unpaired electron, thus making them highly reactive. These radicals include superoxide anion and hydroxyl radical, and they have been implicated in the pathogenesis of cardiovascular disease [2]. Reactive oxygen species (ROS) are metabolites of univalent or divalent reduction of molecular oxygen, specifically superoxide and hydrogen peroxide, respectively. Reactive nitrogen species (RNS) include the free radical nitric oxide (NO) and peroxynitrite, the reaction product of NO and superoxide. ROS and RNS serve dual roles both as signaling molecules at low concentrations, and, at higher concentrations, as mediators of cellular damage [2, 3]. Steady-state levels of ROS and RNS are normally maintained by active processes and reflect their rate of production and removal by enzymatic and nonenzymatic systems [3, 4]. The term oxidative stress refers to increases in ROS that occur as a result of increases in formation and/or reductions in scavenging or degradation.
In this chapter, we examine the relationship between oxidative stress in the development and maintenance of hypertension as well as changes in vascular structure and function. We focus on enzymatic systems that contribute to oxidative stress, such as NAD(P)H oxidase, and those that limit oxidative stress, including superoxide dismutase (SOD), glutathione peroxidase (GPx), and catalase.

2 Linking Oxidative Stress with Hypertension

It is clear from the evidence in the literature that oxidative stress plays an important role in the pathogenesis of experimental and human hypertension. Some of the first data to implicate ROS in hypertension came from a study by Wei et al. [5], which showed that in response to acute hypertension, superoxide accumulated in the extracellular space and contributed to the impairment of cerebral vascular responses by inactivation of endothelium-derived relaxing factor, now known as NO. Moreover, the impaired vascular responses could be restored toward normal with SOD and catalase, providing strong evidence that acute hypertension produced oxidative stress and impaired vascular responses [5]. Indeed, genetic models of hypertension exhibit reductions in endothelium-dependent relaxation and increased vascular sensitivity to ROS [6–11]. Collectively, these findings underscored the impact of changes in NO bioavailability and that increases in ROS reduce the bioavailability of NO resulting in increases in vascular tone. Thus, alterations in ROS would be predicted to have a profound influence on blood pressure.

To our knowledge, some of the first evidence to implicate a role for superoxide/ROS in chronic hypertension came from two independent studies in which administration of antioxidants lowered blood pressure in spontaneously hypertensive rats (SHR) and in hypertensive individuals [12, 13]. In a study by Nakazono et al. [13], intravenous administration of a fusion protein consisting of human CuZnSOD and a peptide with high affinity for heparin sulfate on endothelial cells produced a reduction in blood pressure in SHR but not in normotensive controls. These studies suggested that superoxide near endothelium contributes to the pathogenesis of hypertension, presumably due to reductions in bioavailable NO. Based on their findings, the authors proposed that hypertension is a “free radical disease.” Consistent with this concept, endogenous antioxidant levels and activity are reduced with hypertension [14–18].

Since these initial findings, oxidative stress has been shown to contribute to vascular complications such as endothelial dysfunction and vascular hypertrophy in diverse models of hypertension and in human hypertension (Table 13.1). For example, vascular superoxide levels are increased in animals made hypertensive by infusion of angiotensin II, and manipulations aimed at reducing superoxide (such as viral transfection with genes encoding SOD or treatment with pharmacological scavengers of superoxide) reduce blood pressure and improve vascular function [23, 28–30, 35, 56, 57].
The link between oxidative stress and angiotensin II in hypertension was propelled by the identification that angiotensin II-induced ROS formation in vascular muscle is mediated, at least in part, by vascular NAD(P)H oxidases distinct from that expressed in neutrophils [58]. Administration of angiotensin II in vivo results in increased expression of several components of the vascular NAD(P)H oxidase [20, 24, 59, 60, 61]. Increases in blood pressure and ROS produced by angiotensin II for relatively short periods of time (1–2 weeks) seem to be selective, because hypertension produced by norepinephrine was not affected by antioxidants [20]. The role of ROS in mediating more chronic effects of angiotensin II and norepinephrine are unclear, as there is evidence to suggest that norepinephrine can increase vascular ROS [62].

A major role for angiotensin II in the generation of ROS in hypertension is supported by studies in human hypertension [44–55]. For example, beneficial effects of blood pressure lowering and reduction in markers of oxidative stress occur in hypertensive patients treated with angiotensin-converting enzyme (ACE) inhibitors and angiotensin receptor blockers [63–66]. Together, these studies provide strong evidence for a role for angiotensin II-derived ROS in hypertension.

There are numerous potential enzymatic and nonenzymatic sources of ROS in blood vessels (Table 13.2). However, ROS derived from NAD(P)H oxidase may be the major source of ROS in hypertension. Increases in ROS are typically kept at relatively low levels by the activity of endogenous antioxidant enzymes, including SOD, glutathione peroxidases, and catalase (Table 13.2).

Antioxidant treatment in systems other than the vasculature, such as the kidney and brain, also have beneficial blood pressure-lowering effects in hypertension [67–71], suggesting that renal and central mechanisms that regulate blood pressure

Table 13.1 Examples of vascular oxidative stress and hypertrophy in experimental models of hypertension and hypertension in humans

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Experimental model [reference]</th>
<th>Human hypertension [reference]</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adrenocorticoid [20]</td>
<td>Primary (essential) hypertension [44–51]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Angiotensin II [20–26]</td>
<td>Secondary hypertension (e.g., renovascular) [52–55]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dahl salt-sensitive [27,28]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Genetic:</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SHR [28–30]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SHR-stroke prone [31]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Blood pressure high (BPH) mice [32]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Human Nox2 (smooth muscle specific) [33]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Human p22phox (smooth muscle specific) [34]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Human renin and human angiotensinogen [35,36]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Human renin [37]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Human Rac1 [38]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mineralocorticoid [39–41]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Renovascular:</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2-Kidney 1-clip [42]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-Kidney 1-clip [43]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
also are impacted by oxidative stress. For example, local treatment with the superoxide scavenger Tempol in the kidney and viral-mediated gene transfer of SOD in the brain limit the rise in blood pressure produced by systemic administration of angiotensin II [67, 69]. Interestingly, evidence supports an important role for hydrogen peroxide as plasma hydrogen peroxide levels are increased in hypertensive humans [44, 45]. Consistent with this concept, renal infusion of hydrogen peroxide increases blood pressure in rats [68]. Taken together, these findings implicate a potential role for superoxide and hydrogen peroxide in hypertension.

In addition to ROS, hypertension is associated with increases in peroxynitrite, a marker of oxidative/nitrosative stress and a mediator of cellular dysfunction in blood vessels [3]. Peroxynitrite produces tyrosine nitration of selective proteins, including MnSOD, and activation of poly(ADP-ribose) polymerase, another potentially important mediator of endothelial dysfunction in hypertension [4]. Moreover, peroxynitrite formation has been implicated as a mechanism of endothelial NO synthase (eNOS) uncoupling, due to oxidation of tetrahydrobiopterin and/or the zinc-thiolate complex of eNOS [4].

Clearly, oxidative stress plays a major role in the pathological consequences of hypertension, and although multiple sources of ROS may contribute to oxidative stress, we limit our discussion to NAD(P)H oxidase, which has been identified as a major source of ROS in this disease [72–74]. We also limit our discussion to the role of NAD(P)H oxidase in the vasculature.

Although much attention has focused on the role of enzymes that increase superoxide formation, much less is known regarding alterations in antioxidant enzyme expression and/or activity in relation to blood pressure. This is important because levels of antioxidant enzymes influence the overall level of oxidative stress, and genetic manipulations of these enzyme systems have a major influence on blood pressure and on vascular function and structure [4, 75]. Although nonenzymatic processes and molecules (such as thioredoxin and vitamin C) also affect levels of ROS, we limit our discussion to some of the enzymatic systems that reduce oxidative stress. For each, and where data are available, we discuss the effects of genetic alterations on blood pressure, oxidative stress, and blood vessels.
3 NAD(P)H Oxidase: A Major Prooxidant Enzyme

The vascular NAD(P)H oxidase is a multisubunit complex consisting of the membrane-bound subunits of the Nox isoforms (a gp91phox homolog of the neutrophil oxidase) and p22phox, and the cytosolic subunits p47phox, p67phox, and Rac1 (a G protein) [73]. The Nox isoforms and p22phox are integral components of the oxidase, and collectively they form the membrane component necessary for the transfer of electrons from NAD(P)H to oxygen [73]. Expression of the various components of the oxidase varies within the vasculature and within cell types [76, 77]. Hypertension produced by angiotensin II infusion produces increased expression of gp91phox, p22phox, and p67phox and increased NAD(P)H oxidase activity in the vasculature [22, 25, 60, 61]. Pharmacologic or molecular inhibition of NAD(P)H oxidase lowers blood pressure, reduces oxidative stress, and improves vascular responses in several models of hypertension [74, 78]. Most of the NAD(P)H oxidase subunits have been genetically manipulated in mice, and they have been found to have significant effects on blood pressure in models of hypertension (discussed below). In addition, ACE inhibitors and angiotensin receptor blockers lower blood pressure and decrease ROS (and reduce NAD(P)H oxidase expression) in SHR and stroke-prone SHR [79, 80]. Together, these findings provide strong evidence for NAD(P)H oxidase in the regulation of blood pressure and vascular function during angiotensin II-induced hypertension.

3.1 Nox Isoforms

Although there are several isoforms of Nox proteins, including Nox1–5 and Duox1-2, we discuss those isoforms primarily restricted to the vasculature. Blood vessels have been found to express Nox1, Nox2 and Nox4 [81–83]. Nox1 is expressed in both endothelium and smooth muscle, Nox2 is expressed in endothelium and adventitia fibroblasts and in smooth muscle of resistance vessels (but not in large blood vessels), whereas Nox4 is expressed in all vascular cell types [76]. Because NAD(P)H oxidase is a major source of superoxide and all Nox isoforms function as catalytic subunits of the NAD(P)H oxidase, alterations in Nox isoforms would be predicted to have profound effects on vascular function and structure and on blood pressure.

3.1.1 Nox1

Under baseline conditions, blood pressure is not altered in mice deficient in expression in Nox1 [84, 85]. The initial pressor response to angiotensin II administration is not affected in homozygous Nox1-deficient mice; however, the maintained response to chronic angiotensin infusion is markedly reduced [84, 85]. These findings suggest that a Nox1-containing NAD(P)H oxidase plays a critical
role in the maintenance but not in the development of angiotensin II-induced hypertension. Nox1 deficiency was also associated with a partial reduction in angiotensin II-induced increases in ROS [85]. Somewhat surprisingly, Nox1 deficiency did not blunt the hypertrophic response in aorta to angiotensin II [84, 85]. These results suggest that despite a reduction in ROS and blood pressure, Nox isoforms other than Nox1 mediate the vascular hypertrophy in response to angiotensin II. Alternatively, other sources of superoxide or other mechanisms not related to ROS may account for this response.

Blood pressure and aortic structure is normal in transgenic mice expressing human Nox1 targeted to smooth muscle [86]. In contrast, infusion of angiotensin II produced a greater increase in blood pressure and vascular hypertrophy in these mice than in nontransgenic mice [86]. These findings suggest that Nox1-derived superoxide specifically in smooth muscle has an important influence on blood pressure and vascular hypertrophy in response to angiotensin II. Although there have been no reports, to our knowledge, of Nox1 genetic polymorphisms associated with human hypertension, these initial experiments in genetically altered Nox1 mice clearly implicate an important role for this Nox isoform in contributing to hypertension in response to angiotensin II.

3.1.2 Nox2

In Nox2 (gp91phox)-deficient mice, arterial blood pressure is modestly reduced, suggesting a role for Nox2 in the maintenance of basal blood pressure [37, 87–90]. Chronic administration of angiotensin II in Nox2-deficient mice produced a similar degree of hypertension as in wild-type mice [37, 87–90]. Nox2 deficiency also did not limit hypertension produced by overexpression of a constitutively active renin gene [37], providing additional evidence that Nox2 expression is not necessary for the development of hypertension. In contrast to the lack of effect on blood pressure, Nox2 deficiency produced a reduction in aortic superoxide levels, suggesting that the increase in blood pressure in response to angiotensin II in Nox2-deficient mice occurs independently of the increase in oxidative stress [37, 87–90]. In addition, Nox2 deficiency produces a reduction in the pressor response and vascular oxidative stress in a model of renovascular (2-kidney, 1-clip) hypertension [90].

Endothelial dysfunction produced by renovascular hypertension was less in Nox2 deficient mice compared with controls [90]. A potential limitation related to many of these studies is that examination of superoxide levels and vascular responses were generally restricted to aorta or other large blood vessels that do not contribute to vascular resistance. Thus, it would be of interest to determine the functional effects of these genetic manipulations on vascular structure and function in resistance blood vessels in future studies.

Recently, Nox2 overexpression in endothelium has been achieved in mice, and although an increase in basal superoxide levels in aorta was produced, there was no alteration in blood pressure [33]. In response to angiotensin II, both vascular superoxide and blood pressure were increased in endothelial-specific Nox2
transgenic mice [33]. Interestingly, Nox2 overexpression also was associated with increases in expression of vascular antioxidant enzymes, perhaps reflecting a compensatory response to the increase in oxidative stress. Such findings demonstrate that overexpression of Nox2 targeted to endothelium promotes oxidative stress and hypertension in response to angiotensin II.

### 3.1.3 Nox4

Nox4 is the only Nox isoform expressed throughout the vessel wall (i.e., endothelium, smooth muscle, and adventitia) [76], but the major site of expression is endothelium [81]. Because Nox4 expression can be induced by various stimuli, including angiotensin II [76], studies of Nox4-deficient and transgenic mice should be of interest. To date, genetic polymorphisms in the Nox4 gene have not, to our knowledge, been identified.

### 3.2 p22phox

Along with the Nox subunit isoforms, p22phox comprises the membrane-bound component of the vascular NAD(P)H oxidase [73]. p22phox plays an important role in the membrane stabilization of NAD(P)H oxidase, and it serves as a docking site for the cytosolic components [73].

The human p22phox gene has been expressed in smooth muscle in transgenic mice [34, 91]. Expression of p22phox in this model had no effect on baseline blood pressure or vascular structure [34]. However, in response to angiotensin II infusion, p22phox overexpression in smooth muscle resulted in an increase in the development, but not the sustained phase, of hypertension [91]. In addition, expression of p22phox increased smooth muscle ROS and hypertrophy [91]. Although these findings provide important insight into the effect of p22phox in smooth muscle, we are not aware of studies describing the effects of p22phox targeted to endothelium or adventitial fibroblasts, or the generation of mice genetically deficient in p22phox.

SHR exhibit increased expression of p22phox that may be related to functional polymorphisms within the promoter region of the p22phox gene [92–94]. At least five p22phox polymorphisms have been identified in SHR, all of which are associated with increased p22phox expression and NAD(P)H oxidase activity [94]. Similarly, multiple polymorphisms of the p22phox gene have been identified in humans and several have been associated with hypertension [95–98]. These polymorphisms are primarily localized to the promoter region of the p22phox gene, and they are associated with increased translational activity, and increased vascular superoxide and blood pressure in hypertensive individuals [95–98]. Three polymorphisms have been identified in the human p22phox gene, including –930A/G, A640G, and C242T [95–98]. The –930A/G polymorphism is associated with increased expression of p22phox and increased NAD(P)H oxidase in primary hypertension [95]. Of the three
known polymorphisms of the p22\textsuperscript{phox} gene, the –930A/G polymorphism has been suggested to be a potential and novel marker for hypertension in humans [95].

3.3 \textit{p47\textsuperscript{phox}}

The cytosolic NAD(P)H oxidase subunit p47\textsuperscript{phox} is a critical subunit of all NAD(P)H oxidase isoforms [73, 76]. Although p47\textsuperscript{phox} may not be essential for basal NAD(P)H oxidase activity, it plays a critical role in NAD(P)H oxidase activation in response to various stimuli, including angiotensin II [99–103]. Angiotensin II increases the phosphorylation and translocation of p47\textsuperscript{phox} via a cSrc-dependent mechanism, resulting in increased NAD(P)H oxidase activity [100–102].

Baseline blood pressure in p47\textsuperscript{phox}-deficient mice is either normal or increased [104–107]. In one report, systolic blood pressure was markedly higher in homozygous p47\textsuperscript{phox} deficient mice than in controls [106]. The difference in blood pressure in younger p47\textsuperscript{phox} deficient mice could be normalized with either an ACE inhibitor or an angiotensin receptor blocker [106]. The hypertension in these mice seems to be transient because blood pressure normalizes as the mice continue to age, so that blood pressure was not different at 60 weeks of age compared with wild type [106]. Moreover, basal vascular superoxide levels are similar in p47 \textsuperscript{phox}-deficient and wild-type mice, suggesting that activation of renin-angiotensin system with p47 \textsuperscript{phox} deficiency occurs independent of ROS formation [106]. The pressor response to angiotensin II was blunted in p47\textsuperscript{phox}-deficient mice [104]. Together, these findings suggest an important role for p47\textsuperscript{phox} in baseline blood pressure and in mediating the pressor response to angiotensin II.

Although the exact role of p47\textsuperscript{phox} in activation of NAD(P)H oxidase has yet to be fully elucidated, p47\textsuperscript{phox} expression has multiple effects beyond NAD(P)H oxidase activity [106, 108, 109], thus making it one of the more intriguing subunits of the oxidase. For example, one of the beneficial effects of ascorbic acid is down-regulation of p47\textsuperscript{phox} expression and NAD(P)H oxidase in microvascular endothelial cells [109]. Although p47\textsuperscript{phox} is important for activation of some Nox isoforms, we are not aware of linkages between polymorphisms of this subunit of the NAD(P)H oxidase with hypertension.

3.4 \textit{p67\textsuperscript{phox}}

Although p67\textsuperscript{phox} is not thought to be essential for NAD(P)H oxidase activity, interaction of p67\textsuperscript{phox} with Nox2 has been shown to increase the rate of reduction of flavin adenine dinucleotide, thereby increasing oxidase activity [73]. However, there are no reports, to our knowledge, of p67\textsuperscript{phox} deletion or overexpression in mice. Although polymorphisms have been identified in the p67\textsuperscript{phox} gene [110], there are no reports in which polymorphisms in p67\textsuperscript{phox} are associated with human hypertension.
3.5 Rac1

NAD(P)H oxidase activity is dependent upon interaction with the G protein-Rac [111–113]. To date, three mammalian Racs have been identified: Rac1, Rac2, and Rac3 (Rac1B) [111]. Rac1 is ubiquitously expressed, and is a key component of vascular NAD(P)H oxidase activity, particularly Nox1- and Nox4-containing NAD(P)H oxidases [111]. Rac2 expression is restricted primarily to hematopoietic cells, and it is an essential component of the neutrophil NAD(P)H oxidase [114], whereas Rac3 is expressed primarily in the nervous system [111].

Although Rac1 deficiency in mice is embryonic lethal [115], expression of a constitutively active human Rac1 in smooth muscle has been achieved in mice [38]. Baseline blood pressure is substantially elevated in Rac1 transgenic mice [38]. The hypertension in these mice is reduced by the antioxidant N-acetyl-cysteine, suggesting an important role for ROS [38]. Interestingly, overexpression of Rac1 produces a marked increase in all three isoforms of SOD, perhaps as a compensatory response to increases in ROS [38].

Although no polymorphisms in Rac1 have yet to be associated with hypertension, experiments by using adenovirus for Rac1 have provided support for an important role of Rac1 in hypertension. For example, intracerebroventricular (i.c.v.) administration of a dominant-negative form of Rac1 reduces the pressor response to chronic systemic angiotensin II administration [116]. Conversely, i.c.v. administration of wild-type Rac1 mimics the increase in blood pressure produced by angiotensin II [116]. Together, these data provide strong evidence for a role of Rac1 in the neural regulation of blood pressure.

4 Superoxide Dismutases, Glutathione Peroxidases, and Catalase: Predominant Antioxidant Defense Systems

4.1 Superoxide Dismutases

SOD is the primary antioxidant limiting superoxide accumulation [4]. The three mammalian isoforms of SOD are copper-zinc SOD (CuZnSOD or SOD1), manganese SOD (MnSOD or SOD2), and an extracellular CuZnSOD (EC-SOD or SOD3). GPx and catalase, both of which catalyze the reduction of hydrogen peroxide to water and molecular oxygen, represent the two major enzyme systems that limit accumulation of hydrogen peroxide [4]. Thus, alterations in expression and/or activity of SODs, GPxs, or catalase would be predicted to influence the level of oxidative stress, vascular function, and vascular growth, and hence blood pressure.
4.1.1 CuZnSOD

CuZnSOD is highly expressed in the vessel wall, accounts for the majority of total SOD activity, and it is the isoform of SOD that limits increases in oxidative stress within the cytosolic compartment (including within mitochondria and the nucleus) [4]. There is little, if any, compensation by other isoforms of SOD, or by catalase and GPxs, in CuZnSOD deficient mice [117–119]. Superoxide levels are elevated in these animals under basal conditions in both large arteries and in resistance vessels [120–122]. These increases in superoxide produce reductions in NO-mediated vasodilation [120–123].

Some studies indicate that arterial pressure is similar in CuZnSOD+/+ and CuZnSOD+/− mice, but that it is modestly reduced in CuZnSOD−/− mice [120, 122, 124]. There is one report in which blood pressure was normal in CuZnSOD−/− mice [117]. Thus, in general, blood pressure seems to be reduced somewhat with homozygous CuZnSOD deficiency. The findings that blood pressure is relatively normal in CuZnSOD−/− is interesting, because one might predict that blood pressure would be higher in CuZnSOD-deficient mice because superoxide is increased and endothelial dysfunction is present in resistance blood vessels [122]. These findings highlight the complexity of ROS as regulators of blood pressure, and they suggest that although CuZnSOD deficiency increases superoxide and produces endothelial dysfunction, it is not associated with an increase in blood pressure.

In addition to the effects on blood pressure, vascular function and superoxide levels, genetic deficiency in CuZnSOD produces vascular hypertrophy in cerebral arterioles [122]. Interestingly, the degree of hypertrophy in these vessels correlates with the level of CuZnSOD expression so hypertrophy is present in CuZnSOD+/− mice, but increases further in CuZnSOD−/− mice. Studies such as these support the concept that ROS promotes vascular hypertrophy independent of an increase in blood pressure.

Superoxide and hydrogen peroxide have been implicated in mechanisms that produce vascular hypertrophy [122, 126]. Because SODs rapidly convert superoxide to hydrogen peroxide, CuZnSOD deficiency produces a shift in the equilibrium between superoxide and hydrogen peroxide, resulting in an increase in superoxide. These findings suggest that in vivo model hypertrophy occurs in response to increased superoxide (reduced NO, or both). These findings provide evidence that superoxide may be an important determinant of hypertrophy in vivo.

CuZnSOD transgenic mice have been developed using various cDNA constructs and promoters [127–130]. Expression of human CuZnSOD results in an increase in CuZnSOD expression and activity in various tissues, including blood vessels [125, 127, 131, 132]. Under baseline conditions, blood pressure is similar in CuZnSOD transgenic and non-transgenic mice, suggesting that overexpression of CuZnSOD does not influence resting blood pressure [133]. The pressor response to angiotensin II administration in CuZnSOD transgenic mice is reduced by approximately 40% compared with controls [133]. This reduction in blood pressure is accompanied by
a reduction in angiotensin II-induced increases in superoxide in aorta [133]. In contrast, vascular hypertrophy in response to angiotensin II was unaffected, suggesting expression of human CuZnSOD was not sufficient to inhibit hypertrophy in this model.

In addition to its effect on blood pressure and vascular ROS levels under basal conditions, expression of human CuZnSOD in transgenic mice protects against increases in superoxide and endothelial dysfunction produced by angiotensin II [123, 133]. Although one might predict that the protective effects of CuZnSOD expression on endothelial function reflect increases in hydrogen peroxide formation, catalase had no effect on vascular responses in CuZnSOD transgenic mice [123].

Although many polymorphisms have been identified in the human CuZnSOD gene, none have been found to be associated with hypertension to our knowledge [134]. Interestingly, individuals with Down's syndrome (Trisomy 21) have lower blood pressure than the general population [135]. Whether this difference is linked to the CuZnSOD gene per se (located on chromosome 21) has not been studied.

4.1.2 MnSOD

MnSOD is the primary isoform of SOD limiting increases in superoxide in mitochondria. Although CuZnSOD is expressed in the intermembrane space, MnSOD is expressed in the mitochondrial matrix and is the sole SOD isoform in this compartment [4, 136]. MnSOD expression is thought to account for up to approximately 10% of total vascular SOD activity [4]. Unlike CuZnSOD and EC-SOD, MnSOD homozygous deficiency is lethal (neonatal) [137, 138], reflecting the critical importance of this SOD isoform in limiting ROS within this subcellular compartment.

Blood pressure is normal in young MnSOD deficient (MnSOD+/−) mice [139]. However, MnSOD heterozygous deficiency is associated with the development of mild hypertension with age [139]. Hypertension in old MnSOD+/− mice is associated with increased plasma markers of oxidative stress, suggesting that age-induced hypertension in this model reflects an increase in ROS [139].

A high-salt diet that had no effect on blood pressure in wild-type mice produced an increase in blood pressure in MnSOD+/− mice [139]. The finding that a hypertensive phenotype can be evoked in mice deficient in MnSOD, suggests that normal expression of MnSOD is needed to prevent at least one form of hypertension. These findings also suggest a novel role for mitochondrial-derived ROS in regulating blood pressure. Preliminary studies in MnSOD−/− mice suggest that MnSOD also protects the vasculature from angiotensin II-induced endothelial dysfunction [140].

Several polymorphisms have been identified in the human MnSOD gene [134, 141]. However, the C47T polymorphism is the only one that has been linked to hypertension. This polymorphism is associated with increased MnSOD activity and reductions in ROS and thus may be protective [142].
4.1.3 EC-SOD

As its name implies, EC-SOD is expressed extracellularly and thus should protect NO in transient from endothelium to one of its major sites of action, vascular muscle [4, 143]. EC-SOD contains a heparin-binding domain with high affinity for heparan sulfate proteoglycans on cell surfaces, particularly in basal membranes and the extracellular matrix [143]. Because EC-SOD accounts for a significant portion of total SOD activity, reductions in EC-SOD would be predicted to increase superoxide and have a significant impact on bioavailability of NO.

In most studies, resting blood pressure in EC-SOD−/− mice is normal [43, 144–147], with one study reporting an increase in blood pressure [146]. Basal levels of superoxide in the vasculature have been found to be increased [43, 145, 146] or unchanged [147] in EC-SOD−/− mice, and they seem to vary depending on the blood vessel studied. The effect of EC-SOD deficiency on endothelial- and NO-dependent responses in aorta under baseline conditions has for the most part been found to be minimal [43, 145, 147], suggesting that the role of EC-SOD in protecting NO may not be as great as initially hypothesized.

Several studies have examined the effect of EC-SOD in mouse models of hypertension [43, 145–147]. For example, similar levels of hypertension (despite higher levels of vascular ROS) occur in EC-SOD−/− mice and wild-type controls with renovascular (1-kidney, 1-clip) hypertension [43]. In contrast, the level of renovascular hypertension in a 2-kidney, 1-clip model is modestly increased in EC-SOD−/− mice as compared with wild type [145]. Similarly, hypertension produced by angiotensin II administration is greater in EC-SOD−/− mice with a pressor dose, but not with a slow pressor dose, of angiotensin II [146, 147]. Together, these studies suggest that EC-SOD is protective in some models of hypertension. Although these studies have all focused on the effect of homozygous EC-SOD deficiency, complete genetic deficiency in EC-SOD is very rare in humans. Thus, studies in heterozygous EC-SOD-deficient mice would be of value in more fully defining the functional importance of EC-SOD in hypertension.

Although resting blood pressure in EC-SOD transgenic mice is normal [148–151], we are not aware of any studies that have examined the effect of experimental hypertension on vascular function, superoxide levels, or vascular structure in these mice. However, systemic gene transfer of human EC-SOD reduces blood pressure modestly in SHR, but not WKY controls [152]. The reduction in blood pressure with EC-SOD gene transfer also was associated with reductions in vascular oxidative stress. Gene transfer of an EC-SOD gene variant (discussed below) containing a deletion in the heparin-binding domain had no effect on blood pressure in SHR, suggesting that the heparin binding domain is essential for the antihypertensive effect of EC-SOD.

In human hypertension, plasma EC-SOD activity in African-Americans with hypertension is lower than in normotensive controls [153]. Reduced EC-SOD activity in these patients is associated with oxidative stress, including increases in plasma 8-isoprostanes [153]. In humans, the C637G polymorphism of the EC-SOD gene results in a relatively common gene variant in the heparin-binding domain of
EC-SOD that does not reduce EC-SOD activity [134, 154, 155]. This polymorphism is associated with increases in EC-SOD in plasma, but it has not been associated with hypertension because blood pressure is normal in humans with the C637G mutation [155].

4.2 Glutathione Peroxidases

There are five mammalian isoforms of GPx (GPx1–5), and each catalyzes the same reaction—the reduction of hydrogen peroxide and lipid peroxides to water and molecular oxygen and their corresponding lipid alcohols, respectively. GPx1 is ubiquitously expressed in cytosol and mitochondria [156]. The expression of other isoforms of GPx in vascular tissue are limited. For example, GPx2 expression is mainly limited to the gastrointestinal tract, and it is not expressed at all or at much lower levels than GPx1 in the vasculature [156]. GPx3 is primarily expressed in erythrocytes; however, GPx3 message also has been detected in blood vessels [157]. Because GPx1 is considered the predominate GPx in blood vessels, deficiency or overexpression of GPx1 would be predicted to have the most significant effect on cardiovascular function.

Blood pressure under normal conditions or in response to experimental hypertension has not, to our knowledge, been examined in either GPx1 deficient or transgenic mice. Although studies of vascular function in genetically altered GPx1 mice are limited [158–162], pharmacologic depletion of glutathione, a substrate for GPx, in rats produces severe hypertension and can be partially mitigated by antioxidants [163, 164], suggesting an important role for glutathione (and by extrapolation GPx activity) in limiting oxidative stress. Although several polymorphisms in the GPx1 gene have been associated with reductions in GPx1 activity [134], they have not been found to be associated with hypertension in humans.

4.3 Catalase

Like GPx, catalase reduces hydrogen peroxide to water and molecular oxygen. Expression of catalase is for the most part limited to peroxisomes, but the level of expression of catalase is highly tissue specific [156]. For example, expression of catalase is high in red blood cells and in the liver and relatively low in brain and connective tissues [156]. Several groups have produced mice that globally express human catalase and specifically in smooth muscle [126, 165, 166]. Although baseline blood pressure was similar in mice expressing human catalase, the pressor response to angiotensin II were markedly reduced in these animals compared with non-transgenic controls [165].

Although mice deficient in catalase have been produced [167, 168], the effect of catalase deficiency on resting blood pressure or in response to experimental
hypertension has not yet been explored. Several polymorphisms have been identified in the human catalase gene, some of which are associated with severe reductions in catalase expression and activity [134]; however, association of these polymorphisms with hypertension do not seem to be very strong [169, 170].

5 Summary

As presented, there is strong evidence to support a role for oxidative stress in both animal models and human hypertension. NAD(P)H oxidase is a major source of oxidative stress in the vasculature. Expression and activity of NAD(P)H oxidase are increased in hypertension, particularly that produced by angiotensin II. Genetic manipulation of NAD(P)H oxidase subunits is associated with alterations in ROS levels, changes in vascular structure and function, and it has significant effects on resting blood pressure. Moreover, the degree of hypertension produced in experimental

Fig. 13.1 Hypertension is associated with oxidative stress (i.e., increased vascular superoxide and hydrogen peroxide). Oxidative stress contributes to vascular alterations, including endothelial dysfunction and hypertrophy. In addition to being a consequence of hypertension, oxidative stress may further promote/contribute to hypertension. SODs, superoxide dismutases; GPxs, glutathione peroxidases; CAT, catalase, NO, nitric oxide, ONOO\(^-\), peroxynitrite; O\(^{2-}\), superoxide; O\(_2\), oxygen; H\(_2\)O\(_2\), hydrogen peroxide; H\(_2\)O, water
models, such as angiotensin II-induced hypertension, can be influenced by changes in NAD(P)H oxidase subunit expression.

Although NAD(P)H oxidase represents a major source of oxidative stress, expression and activity of enzymes such as SODs and GPxs are important in limiting oxidative stress. Genetic overexpression and deletion of SOD or GPx expression and/or activity are associated with alterations in vascular levels of ROS. Therefore, changes in antioxidant levels can influence vascular structure and function and also blood pressure. Together, expression of prooxidant and antioxidant enzymes have profound effects on oxidative stress within the vasculature and alterations in the balance of these opposing systems can directly contribute to or limit the development of hypertension (Fig. 13.1).

Acknowledgements This work was supported by National Institutes of Health Grants NS-24621, HL-38901, and HL-62984 as well as support from the American Heart Association Beginning Grant-in-Aid (0565486Z).

References


27. Schnackenberg CG, Wilcox CS. Two-week administration of tempol attenuates both hypertension and renal excretion of 8-iso prostaglandin F$_2\alpha$. Hypertension 1999;33:424–428.


37. Touyz RM, Mercure C, He Y et al. Angiotensin II-dependent chronic hypertension and cardiac hypertrophy are unaffected by gp91phox-containing NADPH oxidase. Hypertension 2005;45:530–537.


Aging and Cardiac Ischemia—Mitochondria and Free Radical Considerations

Paul S. Brookes and David L. Hoffman

Summary Acute myocardial infarction (MI, heart attack) kills 200,000 people annually in the United States, and the number 1 risk factor for fatal MI is age. The biological phenomenon underlying MI is ischemia-reperfusion (IR) injury, i.e., damage to tissue that occurs during and immediately after an MI. In this chapter, following a brief primer on mitochondrial ROS generation, and the underlying pathologic mechanisms of mitochondrial dysfunction in IR injury, we then break down the effects of aging on MI risk into three parts. First, changes in risk factors for MI with aging, most of which are external to the heart (e.g., atherosclerosis). Second, changes in cardiac mitochondrial function with age. Third, changes in the response of cardiac mitochondria to MI. Last, the role of mitochondria in protecting the heart from ischemia is introduced, and the possibility that increased MI risk with aging originates from a degeneration of protective signaling pathways is raised. We conclude with an outlook on the therapeutic opportunities, both current and developing, for the treatment of increased MI risk, in aged human populations.

Keywords Ischemia-reperfusion injury, mitochondria, reactive oxygen species, aging, electron transport chain, cardioprotection.

1 Cardiac Mitochondria and Metabolism

Because the overall theme of the current volume is the free radical theory of aging, with a particular focus on mitochondria-derived free radicals, an important introductory role to this chapter on cardiac ischemic injury is served by describing aspects of mitochondrial metabolism that are unique to the heart.

The heart is a highly oxygen-dependent tissue, evidenced by the ultrastructure of the tissue itself, which is greatly vascularized with a large endothelial surface area. Although the heart typically accounts for only 0.5% of body weight in humans, it accounts for 10% of whole body O_2 consumption. In addition the O_2 consumption of the heart can be expanded over a large dynamic range under intense exercise [1]. The heart also exhibits a very large ateriovenous O_2 gradient,
indicating almost complete \( O_2 \) extraction, with \( O_2 \) diffusion to mitochondria facilitated by myoglobin.

The heart obtains the majority of its large ATP requirement from mitochondrial oxidative phosphorylation. This dependence on mitochondria is highlighted by observations that approximately 35% of the volume of a typical cardiomyocyte is occupied by mitochondria. The major ATP-consuming reactions in cardiomyocytes are myosin cross-bridge cycling and ion homeostasis (mostly \( Ca^{2+} \)). Consistent with these two major functions, cardiac mitochondria are thought to be stratified into two distinct populations: subsarcolemmal (SSM) and intermyofibrillar (IFM), which each exhibit unique bioenergetic properties [2]. The relative importance of SSM versus IFM in the pathology of the aging heart is an area of much scientific interest.

The primary energy source of healthy heart is fatty acid \( \beta \)-oxidation, although, as will be discussed later (Sections 3 and 5), perturbations in mitochondrial substrate choice are prevalent in several pathologic situations. A recent comparative proteomics study examined mitochondria from a variety of tissues, and the study found cardiac mitochondria to be highly enriched in the enzymes of \( \beta \)-oxidation, the respiratory chain, and the “lower-half” of the tricarboxylic acid cycle [3, 4]. In addition, it has been shown that heart mitochondria express a functional monocarboxylate carrier, and this has led to speculation that heart mitochondria may be capable of using lactate as an energy source [5, 6].

2 Cardiac Mitochondrial Generation of Reactive Oxygen Species (ROS)

The generation of ROS by heart mitochondria has received much attention, and index values for \( H_2O_2 \) generation rates are given in Table 14.1 for mitochondria respiring on a variety of substrates. For comparison, values from liver, skeletal muscle and brain mitochondria are also shown.

When considering mitochondrial ROS generation, most research has focused on complexes I and III of the respiratory chain, although it should be noted that there are at least nine sources of ROS within mitochondria (for review, see [7]). In heart mitochondria, the electron transfer flavoprotein of \( \beta \)-oxidation is likely to be a significant source of ROS, given the reliance of the heart on fat oxidation for energy. The role of this protein in cardiac ROS-mediated pathology has received little attention to date.

Another factor that may influence cardiac mitochondrial ROS generation is the availability of antioxidants within the myocyte. Interestingly, it has been reported that cardiac mitochondria may contain catalase [8]. The reason for this is not clear (catalase is not found in mitochondria of other tissues), although the high content of iron in myocytes (albeit bound to heme in myoglobin) would suggest that excessive \( H_2O_2 \) would be more dangerous than in other tissues, due to the possibility of \( OH^- \) generation via Fenton/Haber–Weiss chemistry. The prevalence of other
antioxidants in the heart is relatively under studied, although heart mitochondria (like all mitochondria) contain high (millimolar) levels of glutathione. Thioredoxin also is expressed widely in the heart, and superoxide dismutase (SOD) is also critical for cardiac function, because MnSOD null die prematurely of cardiac complications [9, 10].

Table 14.1  Baseline ROS generation rates from mitochondria under various combinations of substrates and inhibitors, measured by several different methods. See text for details ROS generation rates are given in units of pmols/min/mg mitochondrial protein

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Linked substrate/tissue</th>
<th>Heart</th>
<th>Liver</th>
<th>Brain</th>
<th>Skeletal</th>
<th>Reference</th>
<th>Method</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Complex I - no rotenone</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>[70]</td>
<td>Homovanillic acid</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>577</td>
<td>288</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>[71]</td>
<td>Epinephrine to epichrome</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>49.3</td>
<td>70</td>
<td>170</td>
<td>[75]</td>
<td>DCF</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>20</td>
<td></td>
<td>80</td>
<td>[76]</td>
<td>Amplex red</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>200</td>
<td>[77]</td>
<td>DCF</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Complex I + rotenone</td>
<td>577</td>
<td>288</td>
<td></td>
<td>[71]</td>
<td>Epinephrine to epichrome</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>530</td>
<td></td>
<td>275</td>
<td>[73]</td>
<td>Amplex red</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>300</td>
<td>[34]</td>
<td></td>
<td>Amplex red</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Complex I + antimycin a</td>
<td>250</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>[73]</td>
<td>Amplex red</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Complex II - no rotenone</td>
<td>1,237</td>
<td>1,718</td>
<td>660</td>
<td>[71]</td>
<td>Epinephrine to epichrome</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>280</td>
<td></td>
<td>2,600</td>
<td>[73]</td>
<td>Amplex red</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>400</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>[75]</td>
<td>DCF</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>200</td>
<td></td>
<td>420</td>
<td>[77]</td>
<td>DCF</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>complex II + rotenone</td>
<td>300</td>
<td></td>
<td>1700</td>
<td>[73]</td>
<td>Amplex red</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>150</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>[82]</td>
<td>PHPA</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>100</td>
<td></td>
<td>420</td>
<td>[75]</td>
<td>Cyt c peroxidase</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>770</td>
<td>[34]</td>
<td></td>
<td>Scopoletin</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Complex II + antimycin A</td>
<td>50</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>[73]</td>
<td>Amplex red</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1,200</td>
<td></td>
<td>1,750</td>
<td>[73]</td>
<td>Amplex red</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>300</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Amplex red</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>500</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>300</td>
<td>[70]</td>
<td>Homovanillic acid</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
The generation of ROS by the two different subpopulations of heart mitochondria is relatively unclear, and one important factor in this regard is O₂ gradients across the cell [11]. Several laboratories have reported on the possibility that mitochondrial ROS generation may increase as O₂ levels decrease [12], but O₂ is the substrate for all ROS generation, and we recently used a steady-state [O₂] respiration system to demonstrate that isolated mitochondrial ROS generation follows a hyperbolic function of [O₂] (i.e., less ROS at low [O₂], saturating at high [O₂]) [13]. Thus, it can be hypothesized that mitochondria closer to the cell membrane and the vasculature (i.e., SSM) may generate higher levels of ROS than those further inside the cell and subject to lower O₂ availability. However, in contrast to this hypothesis, in vitro studies on isolated SSM and IFM have shown that the latter contain higher amounts of cytochromes and thus make higher amounts of ROS [14, 15]. These two parameters (cytochrome content vs O₂ availability in vivo) may effectively cancel each other out.

3 Pathologic Mechanisms in Ischemia-Reperfusion (IR) Injury

The overall mechanisms of tissue damage during IR injury can be divided into three temporal stages: (1) Damage occurring during the ischemia itself. (2) Damage occurring immediately upon reperfusion. (3) Damage occurring at a later time (hours to days) after reperfusion, usually associated with an inflammatory response. The role of mitochondria in mediating 1 and 2 has been demonstrated [16], although evidence of a role for mitochondria in 3 is still somewhat unclear.

During IR injury, the major biochemical participants can be summarized as Ca²⁺, ROS, and pH. The complex interplay between these key factors has been reviewed extensively previously [16], and so herein a brief summary and reference to Fig. 14.1 serve to introduce the topic. The development of ischemia (lack of O₂ and substrates due to occlusion of an upstream blood vessel) inhibits mitochondrial oxidative phosphorylation, leading to lower ATP availability and a buildup of lactate from anaerobic metabolism. Low ATP impairs Ca²⁺ export via the, sarco(endo)plasmic reticulum Ca²⁺ ATPase pump, leading to elevated cytosolic [Ca²⁺], whereas acidic pH from lactic acidosis leads to a secondary overload of cytosolic [Na⁺] via the Na⁺/H⁺ exchanger (NHE). In responding to this Na⁺ overload, reverse operation of the Na⁺/Ca²⁺ exchanger then further elevates cytosolic [Ca²⁺]. During ischemia, at least some of this elevated cytosolic Ca²⁺ accumulates inside mitochondria [17]. However, the prevailing acidic pH inhibits opening of the permeability transition (PT) pore that would normally occur in response to such a Ca²⁺ accumulation [18]. Upon reperfusion, several factors converge to trigger opening of the PT pore [19]. Re-energization of mitochondria enhances their ability to accumulate Ca²⁺, resulting in [Ca²⁺]ₘ overload. A surge of ROS generation also occurs after reintroduction of O₂ to the tissue. Furthermore, the normalization of cellular pH removes the acidic-pH brake on the PT pore. Thus, there is widespread agreement that the PT pore stays
Fig. 14.1 Pathologic events in cardiac IR injury. See text for details.
closed during ischemia and opens at reperfusion. Opening of the PT pore results in cytochrome c release and triggering of the intrinsic apoptotic cascade. In addition, the release of cytochrome c interrupts the normal function of the respiratory chain, and owing to the heavy reliance of myocardium on mitochondrially derived ATP, this results in a profound bioenergetic defect that negatively impacts cardiac contractile function [16].

Several cardioprotective agents are known to elicit their effects by inhibiting the events outlined in Fig. 14.1. These agents includes PT pore inhibitors such as cyclosporin A and sanglifehrin A [20], NHE inhibitors such as cariporide [21, 22], mild uncoupling of mitochondria either by chemical uncouplers or changes in expression of uncoupling proteins [23–25], antioxidants such as 2-mercaptopropionyl glycine [26], and the recent discovery that ischemic postconditioning (staccato reperfusion) serves to maintain acidic pH into the reperfusion window [27].

In addition to the events described above, several proteins and other biomolecules within the mitochondrion are subject to oxidative damage after IR injury [28]. These include complexes I, II, III, and IV of the respiratory chain, the ATP synthase (complex V), the adenine-nucleotide translocase, the phospholipid cardiolipin, and tricarboxylic acid cycle enzymes (aconitase, α-ketoglutarate dehydrogenase) [23–25, 29–33]. Together with the energetic defect caused by cytochrome c release (see above), these events together contribute to a prolonged defect in energy metabolism at the mitochondrial level that can last well beyond the immediate reperfusion period. Interestingly, we also showed recently that oxidative posttranslational modification of complex I in IR injury can increase the ability of the complex to generate ROS [34].

4 Changes in Risk Factors and Underlying Causes of IR Injury during Aging

In considering the impact of aging on cardiac IR injury, a distinction should be drawn between IR injury itself (i.e., the events outlined in Fig. 14.1), and the risk factors that lead to an increased incidence of IR injury with aging, i.e., the risk factors for a stoppage of blood flow to the heart.

The primary risk factors for cardiovascular disease are the “usual suspects”: family history, diet, sedentary lifestyle, smoking, cholesterol, diabetes, and oxidative stress. All of these factors contribute to the development of atherosclerosis [35]. Although atherosclerosis was once considered a disease of the elderly, its prevalence among the young is increasing, to the extent that atherosclerotic lesions have now been found in children as young as 12 [36].

Additional risk factors that change with age include decreased activities of nitric-oxide synthases (especially endothelial nitric-oxide synthase) [37], of which activation has been shown to be cardioprotective [38, 39]. Also, arterial stiffness and dilation; prolonged repolarization of the cardiomyocyte action potential, and decreased sensitivity in β-adrenergic signaling; which as been shown to contribute to decreased cardiac output under higher workloads [40].
In addition to the simple observation that the likelihood of suffering an acute cardiac ischemic event (usually due to plaque rupture) increases with age, it also should be noted that the amount of damage suffered as a result of such an event also increases with age, i.e., there are changes at the cardiomyocyte level that make these cells more susceptible to injury upon encountering IR. As mentioned, aged cardiomyocytes have been shown to exhibit a prolonged action potential, which contributes to a decreased sarcoplasmic reticulum Ca\(^{2+}\) pumping rate (decreased Ca\(^{2+}\) handling efficiency). This alteration in Ca\(^{2+}\) handling can increase cytosolic concentrations of Ca\(^{2+}\) (increasing the likelihood of a Ca\(^{2+}\) overload during IR injury) and place added strain on the excitation-contraction-coupling machinery by varying the amplitude and pattern of Ca\(^{2+}\) stimulation. Adding to this, alterations in various myofilament proteins, specifically the Ca\(^{2+}\)-activated ATPase, also have been shown to influence Ca\(^{2+}\) handling in the aging myocyte [40]. Furthermore, it is known that the activity of NHE increases with aging [41], and this is thought to be responsible for the apparently greater sensitivity of aged hearts to NHE inhibitors such as cariporide [42]. All of these effects of aging, combined with aging-associated mitochondrial damage (discussed below), influence Ca\(^{2+}\) homeostasis within the cardiomyocyte, rendering it more susceptible to injury during an ischemic event.

5  Changes in Cardiac Mitochondria during Aging

As mentioned in Section 2, cardiac mitochondria generate ROS, and over time these ROS and other factors associated with aging can lead to damage of mitochondrial proteins, resulting in mitochondrial dysfunction. Notably, of the two subpopulations of mitochondria found in the heart (see Section 1), IFM seem to be far more sensitive to aging than SSM [15, 43–47].

It has been shown that in IFM, aging decreases the activity of complexes III and IV of the electron transport chain (ETC) [43, 46–48]. Although the exact cause of this decrease, or the specific mechanisms of damage unique to IFM versus SSM are not known, it has been hypothesized that IFM have increased numbers of respiratory cytochromes, and increased ETC activity compared with SSM. Indeed, IFM may be more sensitive to age-induced damage because they have a greater target density; alternatively they may produce larger quantities of ROS, or they may lack the means to detoxify ROS (e.g., SOD levels) compared with their relatively unaffected SMM counterparts [49].

5.1  Aging and Complex III

Ubiquinol cytochrome c oxidoreductase (complex III) is one of the major sources of ROS (in addition to complex I) within the ETC. As electrons enter the ETC from complex I and II, they are passed to complex III via the membrane-bound electron
carrier Co-enzyme Q (ubiquinone/ubiquinol). At the $Q_o$ site of complex III, electrons are passed from fully reduced ubiquinol ($QH_2$), generating a ubiquisemiquinone radical ($QH^+$), which can interact with molecular oxygen to form superoxide ($O_2^{-}$), although this is a minor reaction, and normally electrons are passed from $QH^+$ on to the $b$-cytochromes of complex III, resulting in the regeneration of ubiquinone ($Q$).

Because of its ability to generate ROS, it is not surprising that the effects of aging have been linked to increased ROS production, due to damage of this complex. The effects of aging have been shown to damage the $Q_o$ site in complex III, proximal to the Rieske iron sulfur protein (RISP) [46]. The RISP is a 2Fe-2S protein that functions as an electron shuttle from the $Q_o$ site to cytochrome $c_1$ [50]. Generation of $O_2^{-}$ can have drastic effects on the mitochondria, through either mutations in mitochondrial DNA, the formation of lipid radicals, or oxidation of mitochondrial proteins [7, 16]. All of these can further augment the generation of $O_2^{-}$ and increase mitochondrial dysfunction.

### 5.2 Aging and Complex IV

Damage to cytochrome $c$ oxidase (complex IV) during aging was initially thought to involve alterations in the level of cytochromes within the complex [2, 51], although further studies measuring the activity of purified enzyme in aged and control samples suggested that this was not the case [49]. Interestingly, studies measuring complex IV activity in permeabilized mitochondria noted that the addition of phospholipid liposomes containing cardiolipin reversed the age-related loss of activity [52, 53]. Cardiolipin is a mitochondrial phospholipid thought to be uniquely localized to the outer surface of the inner membrane. Its location and strong negative charge are the basis for its proposed role in membrane tethering of the mobile electron carrier cytochrome $c$, which is positively charged due to its high content of lysine residues. Thus, alterations in the structure or quantity of cardiolipin can affect the activity of complex IV by decreasing the influx of electrons from cytochrome $c$. In addition, it is now recognized that breakage of the strong interaction between cytochrome $c$ and the inner membrane may be an important regulatory step in the process of cytochrome $c$ release, during cell death pathways [54, 55].

The proposal of a link between cardiolipin and cardiac mitochondrial aging has promoted much interest in this field. However, it has been revealed that there is no change in the composition of the acyl chains of cardiolipin (CL) during aging [56, 57]. Thus, it is suggested that the loss of “functional” CL at the inner membrane in aging is a true loss in the amount of CL, and not due to changes in the properties of individual CL molecules in situ [14].

Because complex IV is the terminal site of the electron transport chain, it could be hypothesized that inhibition at this site may cause a “buildup” of electrons in the proximal respiratory chain and enhance ROS generation (e.g., at the $Q_o$ site of
complex III). However, such a hypothesis is not supported by empirical observations regarding the effects of complex IV inhibitors (e.g., cyanide, azide, nitric oxide) on ROS generation (reviewed in [7]).

6 Response of Cardiac Mitochondria to IR Injury: Changes during Aging

The susceptibility to damage during IR injury, increases with aging [41, 52]. This may be due to preexisting mitochondrial damage caused by aging, as described above. However, there are some examples which suggest this is not the case.

First, if underlying mitochondrial damage were a cause of increased damage sensitivity in IR injury, it might be predicted that damage in IR would be primarily in IFM, because IFM bear the overwhelming burden of aging-related damage [14]. This is not the case, because both IFM and SSM seem to be targets of IR injury-induced damage in young and old hearts alike [52].

Second, inactivation of the complex III occurs during aging [52], and it has been shown that genetic ablation of the RISP component of complex III causes a decrease in mitochondrial ROS generation in response to hypoxia [12, 58, 59]. Thus, it could be predicted that loss of complex III in aging would lead to lower ROS in IR injury. This is opposite to the actual experimental observation of greater ROS generation in mitochondria from aged hearts [46]. In addition, although some generation of ROS may indeed occur during ischemia/hypoxia [60], the majority of ROS generation during IR typically occurs upon reperfusion [61], and studies performed in this laboratory have shown that under tightly controlled O_2 tensions, mitochondrial ROS production decreases as O_2 levels drop [14].

Third, it is known that the sensitivity of SSM to Ca^{2+} overload and PT pore opening is far greater than that of IFM [62]. Thus, it would be expected that SSM would be more susceptible to damage in IR injury, and yet IFM are in fact more sensitive in aging. Thus, the patterns of damage to IFM versus SSM seem opposite in response to either aging or IR injury, with IFM dominating the former and SMM the latter. The role of preexisting age-related mitochondrial defects, in determining the response of mitochondria to IR injury, is both complicated and sometimes paradoxical.

In addition to changes in mitochondrial function in aging, that may affect IR injury response, several of the key pathologic mechanisms of IR injury also may be perturbed in aging. An example of this is increased levels of accumulated cytosolic Ca^{2+} in aged hearts compared with younger controls [41], thus increasing the probability for opening of the PT pore. In addition, the amount of SOD, an enzyme responsible for converting O_2^− to the less reactive H_2O_2, has been shown to decrease during aging [48]. Such as loss of SOD occurring at the cardiac level, could explain the observed increased risk of ROS-induced ROS production in aged hearts [63].
7 Efficacy of Cardioprotection in Aging

How much of the decline in recovery from IR injury observed during aging, is a gain of damage versus a loss of protective signaling pathways? To answer this question, it is necessary to give a brief overview of cardioprotection.

One of the most widely studied cardioprotective mechanisms is that of ischemic preconditioning (IPC), in which short nonlethal periods of IR (typically three to five cycles of 3–5 min each) can significantly protect the heart from subsequent prolonged IR injury [64]. Figure 14.2 shows an overview of various cardioprotective signaling pathways, highlighting that nearly all of these pathways converge on the mitochondrion, and the inhibition of PT pore opening, as an end effector. Notably, several widely popular clinical protective interventions also converge on these same signaling pathways.

The efficacy of IPC decreases with aging and the underlying mechanisms for this decrease are currently unclear [41, 63, 65]. In addition, several pharmacologic
agents that mimic IPC (e.g., volatile anesthetics) are also less effective in aged patient populations [66, 67]. Perturbations to several cardioprotective signaling pathways have been observed during aging. One such example is a defect in the cardioprotective signal transduction pathway that leads to activation of the mitochondrial KATP channel [68]. Another example is the insulin → Akt signaling pathway, which is known to decrease significantly with age, probably related to the increased incidence of insulin resistance/type 2 diabetes/metabolic syndrome with aging [69]. Another example is the nitric-oxide signaling pathway, which has been shown to decline with aging [37].

Interestingly, this final example also serves to highlight the potential therapeutic avenues that are available to ameliorate the decline in functional recovery of the heart from IR injury, which occurs during aging. Nitric oxide is a broad cardioprotective agent, acting at a number of molecular targets within cardiomyocytes (including several in mitochondria) to afford protection from IR injury [38, 39]. Thus, increasing NO levels may be an important therapeutic in aging.

8 Concluding Remarks

In considering the mitochondrial free radical theory of aging, it is sometimes difficult to delineate between aging itself, and the various diseases of aging. It is hoped that the proceeding chapter highlighted that the myocardium, in the pathologic setting of IR injury, is both a disease condition, and a microcosm of the aging process. Further delineation of the changes in mitochondrial function in IR injury alone, in aging, and in both, will lead to the identification of novel targets for therapeutic approaches. Given the essential nature of cardiac function for viability of most organisms, it is hoped that such therapies may be broadly considered as life span extenders.

Acknowledgements Work in the laboratory of P.S.B. is funded by National Institutes of Health grant HL-071158.

References


Role of the Antioxidant Network in the Prevention of Age-Related Diseases

Mauro Serafini

Summary The “free radical” theory of ageing is based on the fact that the deleterious effects of an excessive production of free radicals produced during aerobic metabolism cause oxidative stress, damaging biomolecules, cell structure, and function. It is widely believed that the release of free radicals, either as a by-product of normal metabolism or associated with inflammatory reactions, can contribute to a number of age-related diseases such as cardiovascular disease and cancer. Several ecological, case-control, and cohort studies indicate that diets rich in plant foods might reduce age-related disease development. Among a number of mechanistic hypotheses, diet-derived antioxidants have been proposed to contribute to explain these findings. However, contrasting results from intervention trials have raised strong concerns about the influence of antioxidants on human health. A vulnerable point of the research on antioxidants is the lack of information on the effect of the whole array of dietary antioxidants in disease prevention, because so far mainly single molecules have been investigated. Epidemiological and experimental evidence is mounting on the potential importance of the so called total antioxidant capacity (TAC). TAC represent a direct measurement of the nonenzymatic antioxidant network considering single antioxidant activity and the synergistic interactions of the redox molecules present in the tested matrix. This chapter describes the results of the main clinical trial involving galenic antioxidants, discussing the importance of properly assessing endogenous and dietary TAC to obtain an integrated and realistic portrait of the complex interactions at the basis of the postulated antiageing effect of antioxidants molecules.

Keywords Total antioxidant capacity, ageing, oxidative stress, redox status, plant foods, diseases.

1 Introduction

It is widely believed that the release of free radicals, either as a by-product of normal metabolism or associated with inflammatory reactions, can contribute to a number of human age-related diseases [1], although it is still unclear whether free radical-induced oxidative stress is the initiating event [2].
A large and consistent body of scientific evidence indicates that diets rich in fruit and vegetables provide protection against cardiovascular disease (CVD), several common types of cancer, and other diseases [3, 4]. However, despite the consensus of the evidence about the health effects of vegetables, it sill unclear which components are protective and their mechanism of action. On the basis of the premise that diet-derived antioxidants reduce oxidative stress, as suggested by the “antioxidant hypothesis” [5], many clinical trials have tested different redox molecules as a therapy to prevent degenerative diseases. However, contrasting results from intervention trials have raised strong concerns about the influence of antioxidants on human health [6, 7]. A vulnerable point of the research on antioxidants is the lack of information on the effect of the whole array of molecules, constituting the antioxidant network, in disease prevention, because so far mainly single molecules have been investigated.

The body’s nonenzymatic antioxidant network can be assessed through the measurement of TAC, defined as the moles of radicals neutralized per one liter of tested sample [8]. As displayed in Fig. 15.1, TAC represents the result of many variables, such as redox potentials of the compounds present in the matrix, their cumulative and synergistic interaction, the nature of the oxidizing substrate, and antioxidant localization and solubility. Moreover, TAC considers the cumulative action of all the antioxidants present in the matrix (e.g., plasma, saliva, food extracts, tissues), providing an integrated parameter rather than the simple sum of measurable antioxidants.

This chapter describes results of the main clinical trial involving galenic antioxidants discussing the importance of properly assessing endogenous and dietary TAC to obtain an integrated and realistic portrait of the complex interactions at the basis of the postulated antiageing effect of antioxidants molecules.

![Fig. 15.1](image-url)  
**Fig. 15.1** Multiple factors affecting total antioxidant capacity: the TAC concept. RONS = reactive oxygen nitrogen species. Source: [8]
2 Galenic Antioxidant Supplementation and Disease Prevention

2.1 Cardiovascular Diseases

Half of the mortality in Western populations is due to diseases of the cardiovascular system in which the main pathophysiological factor is atherosclerosis. Atherosclerosis is a chronic inflammatory process that involves a complex interplay between circulating cellular and blood elements within the cells of the artery wall [9, 10]. Clinical, genetic, and epidemiological studies demonstrate that oxidative stress, and particularly oxidation of low-density lipoproteins, is a risk factor and plays a significant pathogenetic role for atherosclerotic diseases [11, 12].

The role of antioxidants in CVD prevention has been evaluated in different clinical trials. Rimm et al. [13] examined data from 39,910 U.S. male in the Health Professional’s study. Results showed that men in the highest quintile of vitamin E intake had a lower relative risk (RR) of CVD = 0.60 [95% CI, 0.44–0.81]; RR is the risk of an event [or of developing a disease] relative to exposure; RR is a ratio of the probability of the event occurring in the exposed group versus the control [nonexposed] group) compared with the quintile consuming the lowest amount of vitamin E. The same analyses for β-carotene, showed a relative risk of 0.71 (95% CI, 0.53–0.86) when comparing the highest quintile of intake to the lowest quintile. However, the benefit of β-carotene was only found to be significant in smokers.

In the Nurses’ Health Study, 87,245 women aged 34 to 59 were followed for an average of 8 years. Women in the highest quintile of vitamin E intake had a 34% reduction in risk of coronary heart disease events compared with women in the lowest quintile after adjustment for different confounding factors. Intake of β-carotene was not correlated to any reduction in the risk of coronary heart disease [14]. Knekt et al. [15] followed 2,748 men and 2,385 women aged from 30 to 69 years for 18 years. After adjusting for age and other cardiovascular risk factors, vitamin E intake in women showed a significant benefit. People at the highest tertile of intake showed an RR of 0.35 (95% CI, 0.14–0.88) compared with people at the lowest tertile. In men, it only showed a trend toward benefit comparing the highest to the lowest tertile with an RR of 0.68 (95% CI, 0.42−1.11). Vitamin C showed significant benefit in women as well, with an adjusted RR of 0.49 (95% CI, 0.24–0.98) comparing the highest to the lowest tertile of intake. Carotenoids intake was not correlated with a reduction in the risk both for men and women. The Scottish Heart Health Study analyzed 4,036 men and 3,833 women from Scotland aged 40 to 59 years that were followed for 7.7 years [16]. The study showed that, after adjustment for different CVD risk factors, vitamin C and β-carotene intake were found to be associated, only in men, with a significant reduction in the incidence of new Coronary Heart Disease events. Comparing the highest to the lowest quartiles of intake, RR for vitamin C and β-carotene were 0.57 (95% CI, 0.40–0.83) and 0.68 (95% CI, 0.48–0.96). Vitamin E failed to show any benefit in men. Similarly none of the three antioxidants showed any significant benefit in reducing the endpoints in women after multivariate adjustment.
Three cohort studies [13, 14, 17] enrolling together >150,000 subjects did not show any association between vitamin C intake and CVD mortality.

### 2.2 Cancer

Carcinogenesis is a complex multistep process that can be regarded as a disease of cells, characterized by an excess of cells beyond the number needed for normal function of the body organ affected [2]. The involvement of oxidative stress is thought to be linked to tumorigenesis at different levels. Oxidative damage to DNA has been shown to lead to DNA single- or double-strand breaks and to chromosomal aberrations. The modifications of DNA bases might result in point mutations, deletions, or gene amplification as a first step of carcinogenesis. Furthermore, free radicals are capable of deactivating detoxifying enzymes responsible for the scavenging of potent carcinogens [2].

The first large intervention trial focused on cancer was the Chinese Cancer Prevention Trial, conducted in Linxian County, an area with a very high incidence in esophageal/gastric cancer. Results showed significant lower cancer morbidity, with an RR of 0.87 for total cancer and 0.79 for stomach cancer, at the end of the 5-year supplementation with a combination of 15 mg of β-carotene plus 30 mg of vitamin E and 50 µg of selenium [18]. The first large-scale European trial to be completed was the Alpha-Tocopherol, Beta Carotene Cancer Prevention (ATBC) [19]. In this case, the supplementation with 20 mg/day β-carotene for 8 years was significantly associated with a higher incidence of lung cancer (18%) and prostate cancer (23%) in male smokers. In contrast, a decrease in the rates of prostate cancer (32%) and mortality (41%) was observed in the α-tocopherol (50 mg/day) supplemented group.

Unexpected results were obtained in the β-Carotene and Retinol Efficacy Trial (CARET trial) that showed a significant increase of lung cancer (28%; RR = 1.36) on asbestos-exposed workers after a 4-year supplementation with 30 mg/day β-carotene and 25,000 IU retinol that constricted to interrupt the trial earlier than planned [20]. No effects were observed on prostate cancer risk. The supplementation with 50 mg/day β-carotene for 12 years in the Physician’s Health Study had no effect on lung cancer incidence [21]. However, a decrease in prostate cancer risk was observed in the supplemented people that had low baseline levels of β-carotene. The same dosage was used in the Women’s Health Study [22] for 2 years, and no effect was found on cancer risk. Long-term vitamin E supplementation (6 years, 400 IU/day) did not significantly prevent cancer incidence (RR = 0.94) and cancer death (RR = 0.88) in patients from the Heart Outcomes Prevention Evaluation (HOPE) trial [23]. The supplementation with vitamin E (400 IU/day) even increased the all-cause mortality in head and neck cancer patients [24]. The supplementation for 4.5 years with nutritional dosages of selenium (200 µg/day) gave different results; a decrease in lung (RR = 0.54), prostate (RR = 0.37), and colorectal (RR = 0.42) cancer incidence was reported on patients affected with
skin disorders [25, 26]. The Supplémentation en Vitamines et en Minéraux Antioxydants (SUVIMAX) study was designed to evaluate the effectiveness of a combination of antioxidant minerals and vitamins at nutritional dosages for 8 years (120 mg of vitamin C, 30 mg of vitamin E, 6 mg of β-carotene, 100 µg of selenium, and 20 mg of zinc, per day) on the mortality by cancer and ischemic heart disease in volunteers of both sexes [27]. Gender differences have been observed in terms of efficacy of the supplementation. A significant protective effect against total cancer incidence was seen in men (RR = 0.69) but not in women (RR = 1.04). A similar trend was observed for all-cause mortality (RR = 0.63 in men vs RR = 1.03 in women). It has been hypothesized that the supplementation may be effective only in men due to their lower baseline status of antioxidants, especially of β-carotene, compared with women [28]. In agreement with this finding, in men with low plasma selenium baseline levels, a preventive effect of selenium supplementation against prostate and colorectal cancer has been observed [25, 26]. Moreover, in the Physician’s Health Study [29] a higher effectiveness of supplementation with β-carotene in regard to prostate cancer was found among people in the lowest quartile of baseline plasma β-carotene concentration.

2.3 Evidence from Meta-Analysis

To weigh the evidence, meta-analysis studies of the different clinical trials have been performed. A lack of effect of antioxidant supplementation has been shown in the prevention of lung cancer [30] and CVDs [7]. Bjelakovic et al. [6] reviewed 14 randomized interventions to establish the possible beneficial effect of antioxidant supplements on the incidence of gastrointestinal cancers. A negative effect on overall mortality was described, which was clearly demonstrated for the associations of β-carotene and retinol (RR = 1.29) and β-carotene and vitamin E (RR = 1.10). The potential negative effect of galenic antioxidant supplementation also was observed by Vivekananthan et al. [7], showing that in 138,113 patients assigned to β-carotene or control group, the rates for all-cause mortality, and cardiovascular causes were slightly but significantly higher for β-carotene treatment compared with the control group. With regard to vitamin E, 81,788 patients were included in the all-cause mortality analyses. Results showed that vitamin E did not change the mortality for all-causes (11.3 vs 11.1%) and for cardiovascular mortality (6.0 vs 6.0%) compared with control treatment. Opposite conclusions were reached by Miller et al. [31] who reported, in a meta-analyses on about 136,000 participants enrolled in 19 clinical trials, a statistically significant relationship between vitamin E dosage and all-cause mortality, with increased risk for dosage higher than 150 IU/d. Recently, Bjelakovic et al. [32] reviewed 68 randomized trials involving β-carotene, vitamin A, ascorbic acid and selenium either singly or combined for a total of 232,606 participants. Data showed that antioxidant supplementation, except for selenium and vitamin C, had no effect on gastrointestinal cancers rates but that it significantly increased all-cause mortality.
The results of the meta-analyses highlight the failure of galenic antioxidant supplementations in reducing age-related diseases, and, even more importantly for public health concerns, introducing the concept of a putative lack of safety arising from long-term supplementation. There are some considerations worth making to give a clearer picture of the phenomenon. Vitamin C, vitamin E, and β-carotene, due to their unquestionable redox properties [33, 34], have gained considerable importance during the last decades. However, the analyses of the composition of fruit and vegetables indicate the existence of hundreds of different antioxidant molecules present in the food matrix that might be involved in their protective effects. Moreover, the long period of supplementations used in most of the clinical trial through the use of only one single antioxidants at doses far exceeding the recommended intake (for their vitamin functions) might be one of the factors at the basis of the negative results. The “antioxidant network” of the body relies on the cooperation between molecules and enzymes for setting physiological and optimal redox potential for oxidative stress prevention. The hypersupplementation with only one (or two) galenic antioxidants for years might have caused strong perturbations to the redox balance, leading to the harmful effect. If antioxidants are essential for metabolic function, it does not necessarily follow that more is better. There is a clear need to investigate the physiology of their interrelationships in the different environment, because the uncontrolled increase of one component might be deleterious. If antioxidants work in concert, the choice of selecting few antioxidants at very high doses instead of a mild supplementation within physiological range and respectful of plant food composition might have contributed to the unexpected results.

3 Nonenzymatic Antioxidant Network

Antioxidant defenses of the body are composed of molecular and enzymatic players; however, the composition of the network markedly differs, in terms of concentration and components, in different environments [2]. Protection at the cellular level is mainly guaranteed by enzymes such as superoxide dismutase (SOD), catalase, and glutathione peroxidase, whereas in plasma, nonenzymatic antioxidants are playing the major role. Antioxidant molecules are located in both the hydrophilic and hydrophobic compartments of plasma, and they work in concert to decrease free radical concentrations and to inactivate transition metal ions [2]. Metal-chelating antioxidants such as transferrin, albumin, and ceruloplasmin avoid radical production by inhibiting the Fenton reaction catalyzed by copper or iron. Chain-breaking or free radical-scavenging antioxidants include low-molecular-weight compounds such as uric acid, bilirubin, thiols, vitamin E, ascorbic acid, carotenoids, and coenzyme Q₁₀ [2]. α-Tocopherol is widely present within membranes, representing the most abundant lipid-soluble antioxidant. α-Tocopherol can be regenerated from its oxidized form by reduction with vitamin C, but whether this mechanism is actively operative in vivo is still a matter of debate. The lipid-soluble β-carotene
is an efficient quencher of singlet oxygen. The water-soluble vitamin C has a broad spectrum of antioxidant activities due to its ability to react with different radicals. Glutathione is synthesized from glutamate, cysteine, and glycine and occurs in millimolar concentration in cells but only in trace amounts in plasma. Bilirubin, the end product of heme catabolism, also has been shown to act as an efficient antioxidant. Urate, a powerful free radical scavenger is the end product of purine metabolism. Cutler [35] suggested that, the loss of the enzyme uricase, which transforms uric acid to allantoin, around the Palaeolithic era, coupled with the loss of the ability to synthesize ascorbic acid, resulted in replacement of ascorbic acid by uric acid as the major endogenous water-soluble antioxidant in biological fluids of humans. The antioxidant potency of polyphenols, secondary metabolites present in plant foods, displays a wide range of in vitro activities ranging from the radical scavenging to the metal chelating. However, the low concentration of phenolics in plasma and the lack of identification of their active metabolites do not allow for firm conclusions about their role as possible component of the in vivo antioxidant network to be drawn.

In terms of the participation of individual components to the network, calculated on the basis of the single individual concentration and respective antioxidant stochiometric coefficient, the main contributor to TAC is uric acid (40–55%), followed by thiol groups (10–24%), ascorbic acid (8–15%), and vitamin E (<10%) [36]. Contribution of single antioxidants to overall TAC leaves unexplained a percentage ranging from 20 to 40% that might be accounted for by unknown components, unmeasured molecules (coenzyme Q10), synergistic interactions, or a combination. The multifunctional properties and the versatility of the antioxidant network highlight the efficiency and the crucial importance of the dynamic interactions between the components of the network in protecting plasma from multi-radical attack driven by different sources.

4 Measurement of Total Antioxidant Capacity In Vivo

In the last decade, a large number of assays for measuring TAC in biological matrixes have been developed [8]. These assays are extremely different one from another; differences exist in the free radical-generating system, molecular target, end point, residence in lipo- and hydrophilic compartment, and physiological relevance. The large number of methodologies makes it difficult to chose an assay with respect to another and to understand the results. It is crucial to know exactly what the different assays are measuring and what kind of information can be obtained adopting one technique instead of another. On the basis of the chemical reaction involved, TAC assays have been classified in two groups: (1) single electron transfer and (2) hydrogen atom transfer mechanisms. Assays involving single electron transfer mechanism include (1) ferric reducing ability of plasma (FRAP) [37] and (2) Trolox equivalent antioxidant capacity (TEAC) [38]. Assays involving hydrogen atom transfer mechanism include (1) total radical-trapping antioxidant
parameter (TRAP) [39], (2) fluorescence lipid-oxidation (Fluo-Lip) [40], and (3) oxygen radical antioxidant capacity (ORAC) [41].

4.1 Single Electron Transfer Assays

4.1.1 FRAP Assay

FRAP assay measures the ferric reducing ability of the sample. The method, using iron as redox sensor, determines the reduction of a colorless ferric-tripyridyltriazine complex (TPTZ-Fe$^{3+}$) to its ferrous-colored form (TPTZ-Fe$^{2+}$) in the presence of antioxidants. It is a simple and fast spectrophotometric assay carried out at pH 3.6 and 37 °C. Trolox, a water-soluble analog of vitamin E, is used for calibration. FRAP assay measures the reducing power of the sample, including reductants that are not classical biological antioxidants. Lack of measurement of the contribution of thiols groups and the acidic pH represents the main limitation of the method.

4.1.2 TEAC Assay

TEAC assay is based on the formation of ferrylmyoglobin radical (from reaction of metmyoglobin with H$_2$O$_2$), which may then react with 2,2’-azino-bis(3-ethylbenzthiazoline-6-sulfonic acid (ABTS) to produce the ABTS$^{+•}$ radical cation. The accumulation of ABTS$^{+•}$ can be inhibited to an extent proportional to the TAC. Biases against this method are the influence of plasma dilution and the nonphysiological conditions of analysis. In fact, the peroxidase process does not mimic the radical formation in vivo and the assay uses a nonphysiological radical [42] that strongly reduce its usefulness in biological fluids.

4.2 Hydrogen Atom Transfer Assays

4.2.1 TRAP Assay

TRAP assay is based on the protection afforded by plasma against the decay of a fluorescent target, the protein R-phycoerythrin, during a chemically generated peroxidation reaction. The constant flux of peroxyl radical is produced by the specific azoinitiator 2,2’-diazobis(2-amidinopropane) hydrochloride (ABAP) at 37 °C and pH 7.4. The antioxidant present in the reactive medium gives a lag time directly related to its amount and activity. The results are quantified by standardizing the lag phase with the phase obtained using a known amount of Trolox, and they are expressed as micromoles of peroxyl radicals trapped by 1 liter of plasma. TRAP assay finds its best application in the measurement of the chain-breaking
antioxidant potential of plasma, saliva, urine, and tissues [43], but it is not suitable for measuring antioxidant activity of liposoluble compounds. TRAP assay has been recently adapted to a fluorescent plate reader, lag phase is calculated automatically through a specific program, making the assay suitable for measuring a large number of samples in epidemiological studies [43].

### 4.2.2 Fluo-Lip Assay

In Fluo-Lip assay, an organic peroxyl radical (generated from ABAP) induces the oxidation of 1-palmitoyl-2-(2-(4-(6-phenyl-trans-1,3,5-exatrienyl) phenyl) ethyl) carbonyl)-sn-glycero-3-phosphocoline incorporated into plasma lipoproteins. The oxidation of the target leads to a decay of its fluorescence, and it is well correlated with the oxidation of natural unsaturated lipids. The antioxidant added to the system gives an increase of lag time, which is proportional to the antioxidant action. Results are expressed as lag phase/min. Similar to the TRAP assay, the Fluo-Lip method is characterized by the simultaneous presence of a prooxidant, an oxidizable substrate (lipid) and the analyzed biological fluid. The two assays integrate each other; TRAP works in a water-soluble environment and Fluo-Lip responds more efficiently to lipophilic antioxidants. However, due to the procedure of serum labeling, vitamin C is destroyed in Fluo-Lip assay, and, probably for this reason, the assay has not found a large application in human studies.

### 4.2.3 ORAC Assay

ORAC assay is based on the same chemical principle of the TRAP assay, but plasma TAC is measured as the area under the curve (AUC) of fluorescence in time. Because the quantification of plasma TAC is obtained by the measurement of AUC, the main drawback of this method is the interference given by protein of biological fluids [44]. Protein contribution to plasma TAC can be as high as 86% of the total value, a drawback leading to an underestimation of the contribution of main “chain-breaking” antioxidants. Due to these interferences, ORAC assay find its optimal application for the measurement of TAC in food extracts devoid of proteins, with respect to biological fluids.

Currently, there is a strong need to critically assess, on the basis of the results of well tailored in vitro and in vivo studies, the real information that each assay can furnish, to suggest applicability and limitations of the results to specific samples and to drive the choice of one methodology respect to another. However, until this issue is clarified, as an increasing consensus between the international experts and to best fit the generally accepted principle that antioxidant related processes are multifactorial, it is crucial to understand that the “perfect” method does not exist and a battery of tests should be performed on biological samples. We have decided to choose TRAP and FRAP as representative methodologies for the hydrogen atom transfer and single electron transfer mechanism, respectively. Keeping in mind the
principal characteristics of each assay, information from the different assays should be merged to have a correct picture of the phenomenon.

5 Dietary Modulation of the Antioxidant Network

Many studies have investigated the ability of diet to modulate plasma TAC after consumption of antioxidant-rich foods in healthy humans [8]. The first among these “acute intervention studies,” where TAC was monitored before and after food ingestion, were the work of Serafini et al. [45] and Maxwell et al. [46], which demonstrated that both tea and red wine were able of increasing plasma TAC. This preliminary evidence has been followed by studies showing the ability of different fruit juices, onions, lettuce, chocolate, and honey to boost plasma TAC at different times [8]. Liquids such as wine and tea showed a peak immediately after consumption (30–60 min); and solid foods such as lettuce increase TAC after 2–3 h, with levels returning to baseline in about 4–5 h [39]. The “acute ingestion” protocol represent a reliable experimental model for obtaining information about the potentiality of the selected food items to display an antioxidant activity in vivo or for testing the effect of technology process on the antioxidant properties of foods. However, the homogenous data obtained with acute ingestion studies is not mirrored by long-term dietary intervention trials [47–52; 55–57, 59]. Plasma TAC was shown to increase after consumption of 10 servings of fruit and vegetables per day for 2 weeks [47]. In agreement with this evidence the increase of plasma TAC observed after 7 days of consumption of tomato products with extra virgin olive oil [48] or after 1 mo of supplementation with a plant-based Mediterranean diet [49]. In healthy smoking subjects, plasma TAC increased after consumption of five portions of fruits and vegetables per day for 3 weeks and after consumption of vegetable burger plus a fruit drink for 3 weeks [50, 51]. In the health and nutrition survey carried out in the province of Attica in Greece (ATTICA study), when a large number of subjects was studied (3,042 participants), a correlation between Mediterranean diet score, an index of the adherence of the diet to a standard Mediterranean pattern, and levels of TAC has been revealed [52]. Looking at the single food items, consumption of fruit, vegetables, and olive oil was positively correlated with plasma TAC. In line with this evidence, our group used the Italian TAC database [53, 54] has assessed dietary TAC intake (from vegetables, fruit, oils, pulses, cereals, and alcoholic beverages) in different European Union countries. Dietary information was obtained from the Data Food Networking (DAFNE) study where information from household budget surveys was transformed in daily individual food availability. The TAC food database was adapted to the DAFNE food groups to obtain daily pro capita TAC for each country. Preliminary results (Fig. 15.2) show that Mediterranean countries (Spain, Portugal, Italy, and Greece) had an highest availability in daily dietary TAC (TRAP values ranging from 3,113 to 3,898 µmol of Trolox Equivalent [TE] compared with Northern European countries (Norway, UK, and Ireland; TRAP values ranging from 1,434 to 1,575 µmol TE).
The values for France (2,572 µmol TE) and Belgium (2,000 µmol TE) were intermediate as displayed in Fig. 15.2. Figure 15.3 describes the three main contributors to dietary TAC for the selected countries. Fruit contribution was the highest in all countries except for Portugal, UK, and Ireland, where cereals were the main source of antioxidants. Vegetable contribution was the second highest for Greek and France and the third for Spain, UK, Ireland, and Norway. Italy, Portugal, France, and Belgium display a contribution ranging from 21 to 27% from alcoholic beverages, mainly wine, where Greece shows a very low intake (5%). These results suggest a higher dietary intake of TAC in southern countries compared with northern
European countries, in keeping with the supposed importance of health benefits of the Mediterranean dietary habits.

Lack of change in plasma TAC was observed after consumption of five to seven servings of fruit and vegetables per day, for 2 weeks in 25 healthy nonsmokers [55] or after 1 week of supplementation with 1,500 ml of fruit juice per day [56]. Dragsted et al. [57] conducted an intervention trial on 43 young subjects randomly divided in three groups. The control group was asked to avoid dietary antioxidants for 25 days, where the treatment groups were supplemented with 600 g/day fruit and vegetables and with pills containing the amount of vitamins and minerals contained in 600 g of fruit and vegetables. Results showed no changes in plasma TAC, markers of oxidative damage and antioxidant enzymes after the supplementation with plant foods, pills, or withdrawal of antioxidants from the diet. Serafini et al. [58] pointed out that, due to their ability to cope with light dietary stress, plasma antioxidant defences may need >25 days or specific and stronger dietary stresses, such as a high-fat diet, to be challenged significantly in healthy young subjects.

To further complicate the interrelationships between dietary and endogenous antioxidant network is the recent evidence showing that the improvement of flow mediated dilation, a marker of vascular function, induced by the ingestion of 500 ml of black tea infusion is abolished by milk addition to tea [59]. Findings supported by experiment on endothelial cells showing that the binding complex between milk caseins and tea catechins might be responsible for the lack of effect. The possibility that the in vivo efficiency of dietary antioxidants might be affected by the consumption of different foods is not a new discovery, because the first study to display this phenomenon in vivo was published in 1996 when Serafini et al. [60] reported that the increase in plasma TAC after the consumption of both green and black tea was markedly reduced when the teas were consumed with milk. Strengthening the case, other studies with black tea [61] and chocolate have been shown to lose their ability to increase plasma TAC after milk addition [62]. Inhibitory effects that is in keeping with in vitro evidence in a gastrointestinal model showing that the catechin content, antioxidant capacity and antimutagenic activity of jejunal dialysates obtained were significantly affected by the addition of milk to the teas [63]. The link of phenolics with the proteins of the matrix in which phenolics are ingested might reduce their bioavailability [64] and therefore their potential antioxidant properties in vivo. Contrasting results from this hypothesis came from two studies showing that consumption of a single dose of either lyophilized green or black tea and liquid chocolate together with milk did not abolish the antioxidant effect [65, 66]. However, negligible increase in plasma TAC in the tea study (+3%) and the very low amount of milk (3%) in the chocolate study might have affected results.

Despite the suggested link between diet and endogenous antioxidants network, evidences so far are not conclusive about the identification of the players involved and their interrelationships. Criteria of absorption of dietary redox molecules for optimizing the endogenous antioxidant network according to different conditions (e.g., dietary intake, stress, smoking, physical activity) are largely ignored. Most of the studies have been conducted on a small number of subjects, not using standardized methodologies and without taking into account the existence of homeostatic
mechanisms of regulation of plasma TAC. Physiological diversity in the absorption and disposal of antioxidants are variables that might affect the ability of diet to modulate plasma TAC in vivo. The possibility that the modality of ingestion of foods rich in antioxidants can affect their in vivo antioxidant potentiality cannot be ignored and should be taken in account when designing human studies. Only well tailored in vivo studies aiming to consider the effect of these confounders will allow clarifying the potential role of diet in prompting antioxidant defenses.

6 Imbalance of Nonenzymatic Antioxidant Network and Degenerative Diseases

Despite the potential importance of antioxidant interactions, not many studies have investigated the imbalance of the nonenzymatic antioxidant network in patients affected by different diseases. Table 15.1 describes TAC levels in biological fluids of patients with different pathologies or conditions [67–77, 80–87]. Patients affected by Coronary Artery Disease [67], diabetes, menopause [68], anorexia nervosa, AIDS, liver diseases, colitis, Crohn’s disease, cystic fibrosis, and psoriasis have significantly lower levels of plasma TAC compared with healthy controls [36]. A recent study has shown, in patients with prehypertension, an inverse association between systolic and diastolic pressure and plasma TAC that was lower compared with normotensive subjects [69]. Moreover a significant decline in plasma levels of TAC with the increase of selected risk factors (e.g., smoking, gender, hypercholesterolemia, diabetes mellitus, and hypertension) has been shown in coronary artery disease patients [70]. On the contrary, other studies have reported a lack of difference in plasma TAC levels in subjects affected by diabetes, Alzheimer’s disease, vascular dementia, and Parkinson’s disease [36].

Concerning cancer pathology, Table 15.2 shows studies describing levels of TAC in biological fluids of cancer patients. Patients with lung tumours display significantly lower levels of plasma TAC and lower concentrations of thiol groups, ascorbic acid, and vitamin E, respect to healthy control [71]. In colon cancer patients, this decrease in TAC was accompanied by a decrease in total thiol groups and a significant increase in oxidized proteins and lipid peroxides [72]. Significantly lower serum TAC and higher malondialdehyde (MDA) levels were detected in patients with breast cancer [73]. Similar results were observed in a group of patients with cervical intraepithelial neoplasia, who had significant lower plasma levels of TAC and vitamin C with respect to the control group and a higher plasma MDA concentration [74]. In contrast, in another case control study, Ching et al. [75] showed that the highest quartiles of serum concentrations of TAC were associated with significant reductions (about 50%) in breast cancer risk compared with people with the lowest quartiles.

Liu et al. [76] observed a decline in the TAC either in plasma or in malignant pleural effusion supernatant in cancer patients. This lack of an adequate antioxidant system was reflected in an increase in DNA damage, assessed by the Comet assay,
### Table 15.1  Selected studies describing TAC levels in biological fluids of patients with different pathologies or conditions

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Reference</th>
<th>Biological fluid</th>
<th>TAC method(^a)</th>
<th>Pathology or condition</th>
<th>Patients value(^b)</th>
<th>Control value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>[67]</td>
<td>Plasma</td>
<td>Hydroxyl radical scavenging (mmol/l)</td>
<td>Coronary artery disease</td>
<td>1.14 ± 0.13</td>
<td>1.38 ± 0.20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[68]</td>
<td>Plasma</td>
<td>ABTS (mmol/l)</td>
<td>Menopause</td>
<td>1.14 ± 0.01</td>
<td>1.49 ± 0.02</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[69]</td>
<td>Plasma</td>
<td>ImAnOx kit (µmol/l)</td>
<td>Hypertensive</td>
<td>223 ± 30</td>
<td>259 ± 41</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Prehypertensive</td>
<td>242 ± 46</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[80]</td>
<td>Plasma</td>
<td>Crocin assay (µmol/l)</td>
<td>Ulcerative colitis</td>
<td>1.03</td>
<td>1.42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Chrohn’s disease</td>
<td>0.97</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[81]</td>
<td>Plasma</td>
<td>TRAP (µmol/l)</td>
<td>Alzheimer</td>
<td>−24%</td>
<td>100%</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[82]</td>
<td>Plasma</td>
<td>Luminol assay (µmol/l)</td>
<td>Alzheimer Vascular dementia</td>
<td>263</td>
<td>292</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[83]</td>
<td>Plasma</td>
<td>FRAP (µmol/l)</td>
<td>Steatosis steathopatits</td>
<td>274</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>21%</td>
<td>100%</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[84]</td>
<td>Serum</td>
<td>ABTS (mmol/l)</td>
<td>Coronary atherosclerosis</td>
<td>1.53 ± 0.20</td>
<td>1.52 ± 0.25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[85]</td>
<td>Plasma</td>
<td>TRAP (µmol/l)</td>
<td>Cystic fibrosis</td>
<td>488 ± 34</td>
<td>580 ± 79</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[86]</td>
<td>Plasma</td>
<td>ABTS/peroxidase (µmol/l)</td>
<td>HIV infection</td>
<td>161 ± 97</td>
<td>269 ± 81</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[87]</td>
<td>Plasma</td>
<td>ABTS (mmol/l)</td>
<td>Type 2 diabetes</td>
<td>1.70 ± 0.50</td>
<td>2.70 ± 0.50</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\(^a\)TEAC, Trolox equivalent antioxidant capacity; FRAP, ferric reducing antioxidant power; TRAP, Total Radical-trapping Antioxidant Parameter; ORAC, oxygen radical antioxidant capacity; ImAnOx, Immunodiagnostik AG, Bensheim, Germany.

\(^b\)Values expressed as percentage are referred to TAC values of control (100%).
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Biological fluid</th>
<th>TAC method</th>
<th>Type of cancer</th>
<th>Cancer patients</th>
<th>Healthy subjects</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Plasma</td>
<td>TRAP (μmol/l)</td>
<td>Lung</td>
<td>1,143 ± 181 (n = 57)</td>
<td>1,273 ± 199 (n = 76)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Plasma</td>
<td>Nonproteic antioxidant capacity (%) (inhibition of NADH oxidation)</td>
<td>Colon</td>
<td>55 (n = 54)</td>
<td>90 (n = 20)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Serum</td>
<td>TEAC (mmol/l)</td>
<td>Breast</td>
<td>2.01 ± 0.01 (n = 56)</td>
<td>2.07 ± 0.03 (n = 18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Plasma</td>
<td>TEAC assay (mmol/l)</td>
<td>Cervical intraepithelial neoplasia</td>
<td>1.15 ± 0.17 (n = 58)</td>
<td>1.25 ± 0.15 (n = 86)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Serum</td>
<td>TEAC (mmol/l)</td>
<td>Breast</td>
<td>Highest vs lowest (n = 151) quartile: OR = 0.47 (CI 0.28–0.94) (n = 153)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Plasma</td>
<td>Reduction of o-phenantroline (U/ml)</td>
<td>Lung, breast, thyroid</td>
<td>8.41 ± 1.78 (n = 28)</td>
<td>10.52 ± 1.64 (n = 33)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Serum</td>
<td>TEAC (mmol/l)</td>
<td>Tumors at different sites</td>
<td>1.30 ± 0.03 (n = 82)</td>
<td>1.10 ± 0.08 (n = 36)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
on peripheral blood mononuclear cells compared with healthy people. On the contrary, Mantovani et al. [77] found no differences between serum TAC of 82 advanced stage cancer patients and the respective controls. Li et al. [78] investigated the interaction between the MnSOD polymorphism and the baseline plasma levels of a “calculated” TAC (sum of selenium, lycopene, α-tocopherol and γ-tocopherol concentrations), in modifying prostate cancer risk. Results showed that the different genotype make subjects more or less susceptible to differences in baseline plasma antioxidant levels. Among men homozygous for the A allele of MnSOD, people at the lowest quintile of plasma TAC had an RR of 2.5 and 3.1 for total and aggressive prostate cancer, five- and ten-fold higher than people in the highest quintile of calculated TAC (RR = 0.5 and 0.31 for total and aggressive prostate cancer, respectively). This relation was not significant for those men with VV and VA genotype.

The use of TAC in epidemiological studies represents an approach that has been proposed for the first time for investigating the relationship between dietary antioxidant network and gastric cancer risk [79]. Dietary intake of TAC through 12 plant foods was inversely associated with the risk of gastric cancer. Interestingly, in nonsmokers (low radical load) dietary TAC was protective already at the first quartile (the ratio of the odds in favor of getting a disease, if exposed, to the odds in favor of getting a disease if not exposed [OR] = 56) of intake with no further change, in terms of protective effect, for higher TAC levels (OR = 0.48, 0.46, and 0.44). Among smokers, where a possible unbalance of the antioxidant network is likely, a dose–response relationship for increasing levels of TAC was found, suggesting their higher need for dietary TAC. Indirect confirmation of this hypothesis came from a case control study by Ching et al. [54], which showed a significant reduction in breast cancer risk at the second quartile of plasma levels of TAC (OR = 0.52), whereas the risk did not change markedly in the second and third quartile (OR = 0.47 and 0.41), suggesting the existence of threshold levels for the protective effect of endogenous antioxidant network. Recently, in a Prospective study in the Spanish cohort of the European Prospective Investigation into Cancer (EPIC), TAC dietary intake was shown to be associated with reduced mortality in an adult population (n = 41,440), with TRAP assay selected as best indicator of TAC from plant food [88].

7 Conclusions

The potential importance of the antioxidant network in disease prevention is a relatively new topic of research. Although there are still aspects that need to be further investigated, evidence is mounting that TAC measurement might represent a promising tool to monitor the nonenzymatic antioxidant network in vivo and in epidemiological studies. The multivariable nature of antioxidants network make unavoidable, at least for now, the use of a battery of methodologies for measuring the hydrogen atom transfer and the single electron transfer properties of the tested matrix.
The understanding of the role of diet in prompting endogenous antioxidant defenses needs to be clarified due to the indirect evidence suggesting the concept of a homeostatic control of endogenous antioxidant network. The existence of regulatory mechanisms aimed to avoid unnecessary overloading or deficiency of antioxidants that can cause a "reductive/oxidative" unbalance of the redox network highlights the importance of preserving the physiological levels of antioxidants. The concept of antioxidant supplementation needs to be redefined based on the latest results from clinical trials that antioxidant supplementation might be necessary only in, for example, the elderly or in smokers, where oxidative stress may arise.

In conclusion, the road to understanding the preventive actions of antioxidants cannot be focused anymore on the search of the "redox magic bullet" but requires the understanding of the interactions between the different redox machinery to achieve the highest degree of protection against oxidative damage and an optimal preventive action against age-related degenerative diseases.

Acknowledgements We acknowledge the DAFNE Study for providing the data on food availability in different European countries.

References

8. Serafini M, Del Rio D. Understanding the association between dietary antioxidants, red-ox status and disease: is the total antioxidant capacity the right tool?. Redox report 2004;9:145–152.


43. Serafini M. Total antioxidant capacity of plasma and disease prevention: where are we now? Second International Workshop on Antioxidant Methods, Orlando, Florida (June 2005).


Section IV
Future
16
Reactive Oxygen Species as Signaling Molecules

Ilsa I. Rovira and Toren Finkel

Summary Although the pathophysiological role of reactive oxygen species (ROS) has received considerable attention, there is a growing realization that oxidants also can play a normal, physiological role within cells. These observations came from studies initially using cultured cells stimulated by a variety of peptide growth factors. In this context, several groups were able to show that after ligand addition, the subsequent production of ROS was a necessary component of downstream signaling. Subsequent experiments have defined the enzymatic source of ligand activated ROS production and some of the relevant molecular targets. Here, we review these observations and discuss the role of ROS in normal growth factor signaling. In addition, we describe how these observations are currently being extended to the production of ROS emanating from the mitochondria, and how mitochondrial ROS also might be involved in certain signaling events. We also discuss how ROS might be involved in the induction of cellular senescence by acting as important intracellular mediators. Finally, we review the role of ROS in stem cells and how oxidants might again act to regulate the biology of these critical cells. Together, it is hoped that these observations will serve as a framework to more fully understand how ROS participate in aging. In particular, these observations provide the starting point to determine whether ROS participate in aging as random, stochastic damaging agents, or whether they function as mediators of critical redox-dependent pathways.

Keywords Reactive oxygen species, signal transduction, tyrosine phosphatases, senescence, stem cells.

1 Reactive Oxygen Species (ROS) in Growth Factor Signaling

Our own interest in the concept of ROS as signaling agents began a little over a decade ago. We were particularly interested in pursuing observations that linked a rise in ROS with the onset of atherosclerosis (see Chapter 10). At that time,
it was clear that another reactive oxygen species, namely, nitric oxide (NO), could be produced in a ligand-dependent manner and specifically modulate the activity of a downstream target. For the case of NO, it was known that within the vessel wall, endothelial cells produced the radical species that could then diffuse to the underlying smooth muscle cell layer and modulate the activity of guanylate cyclase [1, 2]. We were intrigued by this general paradigm and wanted to explore the notion that other ROS molecules also could be produced in a ligand-dependent manner and specifically regulate downstream signaling.

As a model, we chose vascular smooth muscle cells (VSMCs) stimulated by the ligand platelet-derived growth factor (PDGF). At that time, there were very few articles describing how to image the production of ROS in living cells. We came across a methodology that used the fluorescent indicator dichlorfluorescein diacetate (DCFDA). This molecule can accumulate within cells, and it fluoresces only when subsequently oxidized. As such, it became a widely used albeit non-qualitative measure of intracellular ROS levels. Although we provided some initial evidence that DCFDA was a useful marker for intracellular hydrogen peroxide levels, subsequent studies by others have questioned to what degree DCFDA is specific for hydrogen peroxide versus other oxidants and whether it is useful as a direct or indirect measure of intracellular ROS levels [3]. Recently, new fluorescent probes have been synthesized that seem to provide the sensitivity and temporal resolution of DCFDA coupled with increased specificity [4].

Using the above-mentioned strategy, we were able to see a burst of hydrogen peroxide production within minutes of PDGF stimulation [5]. Our analysis suggested that ROS generation peaked within minutes of ligand addition and that it returned to baseline within approximately 30–40 min. This time course was similar to what other observers had previously noted for the time course of tyrosine phosphorylation after the addition of PDGF. We were intrigued by this, because it was well known that the addition of exogenous hydrogen peroxide could trigger tyrosine phosphorylation in a ligand-independent manner. We wondered whether the endogenous production of hydrogen peroxide might serve a similar function. To assess this possibility, we increased the scavenging capacity within our VSMCs by increasing the levels of intracellular catalase, an enzyme that specifically degrades hydrogen peroxide. Using this approach we could show that the peak level of hydrogen peroxide after PDGF stimulation was, as expected, inversely proportional to the amount of intracellular catalase activity. Interestingly, in cells where the level of catalase was high, the ability of PDGF to stimulate a burst of tyrosine phosphorylation was severely inhibited. These results led us to conclude that PDGF-stimulated ROS production was required for the subsequent burst of tyrosine phosphorylation. Although our experiments were performed in VSMCs by using PDGF, they were quickly followed by other observations in other cell types by using other ligands [6]. Indeed, it would now seem that multiple different types of cells, and a variety of different ligands, all use some form of ROS-dependent signaling [7–9].
2 NADPH Oxidases

After the observations that growth factors could stimulate the production of ROS within cells and that this increase in ROS was necessary for subsequent signaling, a number of questions arose. What was the source of these oxidants? What was the biochemical pathway between the receptor to the oxidant source? What was the relevant target for ROS within cells, and how could this explain the coupling between ROS and tyrosine phosphorylation? Although many of these questions still remain incompletely understood, significant progress has been made over the ensuing decade.

One critical source of ROS production within cells seems to be a family of enzymes known as the Nox family. This family of enzymes is structurally similar to the classical NADPH oxidase complex found in phagocytic cells. It has been well established that cells such as neutrophils produce large amounts of ROS as part of their role in host defense. Molecular dissection of the phagocytic respiratory burst identified a multisubunit structure that is required for neutrophil ROS production. This complex has both membrane-bound elements (initially termed p22phox and gp91phox) and elements recruited from the cytosol (e.g., p47phox and p67phox). The identity of these subunits was aided greatly by the analysis of rare and unfortunate individuals suffering from the syndrome of chronic granulomatous disease (CGD). Genetic characterization of these individuals has demonstrated that they possess homozygous mutations in one of the four critical NADPH oxidase subunits. Affected individuals rarely survive beyond early adulthood, and their clinical course is manifested by recurrent serious infections. Analysis of phagocytic cells from CGD patients demonstrated that their neutrophils were incapable of producing high levels of ROS (respiratory burst) when challenged with a pathogen [10].

One additional element has been implicated in the function of the neutrophil NADPH oxidase. As opposed to the proteins discussed previously that play a direct role in binding and metabolizing NADPH to produce ROS species, the final element, namely, Rac2, acts more in a regulatory manner. Rac2 is a member of the small GTPase superfamily of proteins, and it is expressed primarily in phagocytic cells, although the highly homologous Rac1 is expressed ubiquitously. For the neutrophil oxidase, Rac2 seems to act as GTP-dependent switch that is required for activation of ROS production when the neutrophil is engaged.

For many years, it was assumed that phagocytic cells were the only cells in the body that made superoxide in a purposeful manner. Indeed, it was generally assumed that expression of the components of the NADPH oxidase were restricted to immune cells. These perceptions have, however, dramatically changed in the past several years. One of the most important reasons for this change is the cloning of novel homologs of the gp91phox subunit. There are now at least six members of this family, with the original gp91phox now more commonly referred to as Nox2. In addition, more recently, homologs of both p47phox and p67phox have been isolated. It would now seem that a variety of cells express Nox family members and
that they are capable of producing superoxide in a regulated and purposeful manner [11, 12]. There is also evidence that Rac proteins regulate the activity of these novel Nox family members consistent with older observation that Rac activity was required for the ligand-stimulated production of ROS [13]. The activation of Rac proteins seems to involve the upstream activation of PI3-kinase (PI3-K) (Fig. 16.1). It is generally assumed but not rigorously proven in all cases that the production of ROS is generally lower in the novel Nox systems compared with the original (Nox2)-dependent enzyme. This might naturally reflect the different amounts needed between using superoxide and its derivatives to kill cells (for Nox2) compared with the use of ROS as signaling molecules. In many ways, this is analogous to the production of NO by immune and nonimmune cells. Again, for NO, immune cells acting through NOS2 produce roughly 3 orders of magnitude higher amounts of NO than is normally produced when either NOS1 or NOS3 generate NO to be used as a signaling molecule.

**Fig. 16.1** Hydrogen peroxide as a signaling molecule. After the addition of certain ligands (e.g., PDGF and EGF), a series of rapid signaling events unfold. Ligand binding leads to the activation of the lipid kinase PI3-K that in turn activates the small GTPase Rac1. This GTPase acts as a guanine nucleotide-regulated switch to activate the Nox family of cytosolic oxidases. These enzymes generate superoxide that can rapidly dismutate to hydrogen peroxide. The generation of intracellular hydrogen peroxide can then presumably interact with numerous downstream targets.
3 Protein Tyrosine Phosphatases

With the realization that ROS levels rapidly increase after growth factor stimulation and that the family of Nox enzymes might be the source of this oxidant burst, the question remained, how does a rise in ROS regulate the burst of tyrosine phosphorylation observed after PDGF or epidermal growth factor (EGF) stimulation? More precisely, what are the molecular target(s) of growth factor-induced ROS? One particularly intriguing possibility is that oxidants might regulate the family of intracellular protein tyrosine and dual-specific phosphatases. This possibility was actually suggested initially in the earliest description of the phenomenon of ligand-activated ROS production [5]. Protein tyrosine phosphatases only act on tyrosine-phosphorylated residues, whereas dual-specific phosphatases can act on tyrosine-phosphorylated and serine/threonine-phosphorylated residues. The catalytic mechanism of both tyrosine and dual-specific enzymes both involve a reactive cysteine residue at the catalytic site [9]. In this context, “reactive” means that the proton of the thiol residue in the catalytic cysteine can be oxidized at a physiological pH. Indeed, the pK\textsubscript{a} of such reactive cysteines is generally very low (<pH 6.0). As such, the cysteine within the context of the cell exists in both the reduced (SH) and oxidized (S–) thiolate anion form.

Previous studies using purified protein tyrosine phosphatases (PTPs) have clearly shown that the oxidized form of the enzyme is catalytically inactive [14]. However, this inactivation is not irreversible. Indeed, the simple addition of exogenous reducing agents (e.g., dithiothreitol) results in reconstitution of full enzymatic activity. These observations have led to the hypothesis that the burst of ROS after ligand stimulation transiently inactivates intracellular PTPs. As long as ROS are high, the ability of these enzymes to reverse tyrosine phosphorylation is inhibited. As such, the action of activated intracellular tyrosine kinases is essentially unopposed. As ROS levels fall, the PTPs can be reduced, presumably through the activity of the glutaredoxins, thioredoxin networks, or both found within the cell. This reduction back to the SH form shifts the balance away from kinases and back to the tonic inhibition of signaling that PTPs provide (Fig. 16.2).

Careful mass spectrometry studies have led to a more fundamental understanding of the redox chemistry involved in this process. The most carefully studied phosphatase is PTP1B. After growth factor stimulation, increased levels of ROS seem to transiently inactivate the PTP1B phosphatase [15]. The initial oxidation seems to result in the catalytic cysteine being oxidized to a sulfenic (SOH) form. Surprisingly, this oxidized molecule then converts to a rather unusual sulfenic-amide bond (S\textendash N) before further reduction to the fully reduced moiety [16, 17]. For the other PTPs, reduction from the sulfenic form also can be achieved by forming a mixed disulfide with the ubiquitous reductant glutathione (S-GSH) or by forming intermolecular or intramolecular disulfide bonds with other reactive cysteine residues [18]. In this manner, the overall activity of PTPs can be regulated by the reversible oxidation-reduction of the catalytic cysteine residue and provides a relatively simple mechanism through which tyrosine phosphorylation, signaling and redox status can be coupled.
Fig. 16.2 ROS regulate PTPs. The levels of intracellular tyrosine phosphorylation represent the balance between the activity of tyrosine kinases and tyrosine phosphatases. Several lines of evidence suggest that tyrosine phosphatases can be oxidized and inactivated by exogenous or endogenous ROS. This occurs for the case of PTP1B by oxidation of the catalytic cysteine first to a sulfenic form (S–OH) that then resolves through the formation of a sulfenic-amide bond (S–N). These observations suggest a plausible mechanism to couple ROS levels with tyrosine phosphorylation and growth factor signaling.

Fig. 16.3 Oxidation state of reactive cysteine residues. Increasing ROS levels results in the oxidation of certain reactive cysteine residues within proteins. The exact identification of a reactive cysteine from an ordinary cysteine is difficult to do based solely on the primary sequence; however, reactive cysteines are usually surrounded by basic amino acids. The sulfenic form is reversible; yet, in the case of phosphatases leads to enzymatic inactivation. Higher oxidation states above sulfenic also can be resolved under certain specific situations in certain proteins.
Indeed, the reversibility of cysteine moieties provides a rapid and reversible mechanism for signaling not unlike the more widely studied mechanisms underlying reversible phosphorylation of serine, threonine, or tyrosine (Fig. 16.3).

4 Mitochondrial ROS

Although the preceding discussion centered on the role of ROS generated in the cytosol, there is also growing awareness that ROS generated by mitochondria also participate in signaling pathways. It is generally assumed that oxidants are generated by mitochondria as a by-product of normal aerobic metabolism. Initial estimates in the 1960s and 1970s by using isolated mitochondria and high ambient oxygen concentration have led to the widely quoted number that 1–2% of consumed oxygen are diverted into superoxide. This number is probably a reflection of the experimental and somewhat artificial conditions in which these initial measurements were made. Although the real leakage of mitochondrial electrons under the usual oxygen concentrations seen within cells (i.e., 3–5% oxygen vs 20% laboratory conditions) is difficult to quantify, it is probably 1 or perhaps 2 orders of magnitude lower than the widely quoted value of 1–2%. Nonetheless, even at this lower revised rate, mitochondria generally are thought to be the predominant consumer of molecular oxygen and produce approximately 90% of the ROS within most cells.

Although there is a growing acceptance as discussed that oxidants produced in the cytosol by NOX family members after growth factor stimulation play a physiological role in signal transduction, this concept has not been widely applied to mitochondrial oxidants. Indeed, the bias remains that production of mitochondrial ROS is unregulated and that they are strictly harmful and nonspecific. Here, for the sake of brevity, we review two recent examples that challenge this notion.

The first example centers on a relatively recent report involving tumor necrosis factor (TNF)-α signal transduction. It is well known that TNF-α can induce a number of divergent outcomes in target cells, including both cell growth and cell death. These differences are due in large part to differences in the type of TNF-α receptor that is engaged and what downstream effector pathway is subsequently activated. The activation of nuclear factor-κB (NF-κB) is thought to be one important mechanism to protect cells against TNF-α-induced cell death. In contrast, activation of the c-Jun NH₂-terminal kinase (JNK) pathway is usually associated with TNF-α-mediated cell death. Usually, the activation of JNK is transient peaking in the first 20 min or so after ligand addition and returning to baseline within 1 h. In cells or animals in which the NF-κB pathway is inactivated, JNK stimulation is considerably prolonged and the degree of cell death is significantly increased. The molecular basis for the cross talk between TNF-α-stimulated NF-κB and JNK activity remained obscure until it was observed that mitochondrial produced ROS could mediate this interaction [19]. In particular, it was demonstrated that the addition TNF-α stimulated a rise in cellular ROS levels.
This ROS increase could be partially suppressed by increased expression of superoxide dismutase (SOD)2, the manganese-containing form of SOD residing in the mitochondria. The link between mitochondrial ROS release and JNK activity came from the observation that the rise in mitochondrial ROS production was sufficient to oxidize and inactivate various phosphatases that regulate the activity of JNK. These investigators specifically demonstrated that mitogen-activated protein kinase phosphatase (MKP)-1, -3, -5, and -7 all became oxidized and inactivated in the setting of TNF-α oxidative stress. Mass spectrometry of in vitro-oxidized MKP-3 revealed that the active site cysteine formed a sulfenic acid intermediate after exposure to hydrogen peroxide. These results suggest two important conclusions. First, the production of mitochondrial oxidants can be regulated by external cytokines; and second, when released, these oxidants can directly target specific intracellular pathways. In this example, the release of mitochondrial oxidants functions to maintain high-intensity JNK signaling that in turn activates programmed cell death pathways. Interestingly, treating cells or animals with an antioxidant prevented JNK activation and inhibited the ability of TNF-α to induce hepatic necrosis.

A second example where the production of mitochondrial oxidants seems to have a specific and important intracellular target centers on the regulation of HIF-1α. The HIF-1α transcription factor is involved in the regulation of >70 separate genes that regulate the response of cells to low oxygen [20]. These gene products provide a coordinated response to the hypoxic environment by encoding for factors that allow for new red blood cell formation, the development of new blood vessels, and augmentation of the cell’s intrinsic ability to perform glycolysis. Together, this program allows the cell to maintain energetic stores in the absence of environmental oxygen (e.g., increased glycolysis) and to increase the future delivery of oxygen (e.g., erythropoiesis and angiogenesis). Much of HIF-1α activity is regulated at the level of protein stability. Under well-oxygenated conditions, the half-life of HIF-1α is very short (<5 min), whereas the protein exhibits a considerably longer half life when cell are maintained in a hypoxic environment. The molecular regulation of HIF-1α stability is achieved by the enzymatic action of a recently discovered family of prolyl hydroxylases (PHDs). These enzymes (PHD-1, -2, and -3) catalyze proline hydroxylation of a specific residue with the oxygen-dependent degradation domain of HIF-1α. Hydroxylation of this proline residue stabilizes the interaction of HIF-1α with the von Hippel-Lindau protein and targets HIF-1α for subsequent proteasomal degradation. Because the enzymatic action of the PHDs requires Fe(II), the Krebs’ intermediary 2-oxo-glutarate, and most importantly, molecular oxygen, the link between ambient oxygen concentration and HIF-1α stability has a clear potential explanation.

A number of observations suggest that HIF-1α also might be regulated by mitochondrial ROS levels. First, in cells exposed to agents such as t-butyl hydroperoxide, levels of HIF-1α increase. In cells with high ROS levels resulting from genetic manipulation, similar results are observed. For example, one recent study explored the phenotype of mouse embryonic fibroblasts that lacked junD, a member of the activator protein-1 superfamily of transcription factors [21].
Interestingly, the junD−/− cells had higher chronic levels of ROS and elevated HIF-1α levels. Subsequent experiments demonstrated that these effects were mediated by an oxidant induced oxidation of Fe(II) to Fe(III) that in turn inhibited the activity of cellular PHDs.

Although these observations with junD suggest that HIF-1α might be redox regulated, they do not address whether mitochondrial ROS are involved. Nonetheless, several recent studies suggest they might be involved. For example, one study demonstrated that the hypoxic induction of HIF-1α was blocked by using a mitochondrial-targeted antioxidant [22]. Similarly, two groups demonstrated that hypoxic HIF-1α induction was blocked when they used either RNA interference-based methods to knock down components of the electron transport chain or pharmacological inhibitors of mitochondrial activity [23, 24]. These groups also were able to demonstrate the seemingly counterintuitive phenomena of increased mitochondrial ROS levels in the setting of hypoxia—counterintuitive because it is widely held that the production of mitochondrial ROS would demonstrate a linear, or at least a positive, correlation with oxygen concentrations. These results suggest that the relationship between oxygen concentration and mitochondrial ROS levels seems to be more complex and seemingly U-shaped in nature. Nonetheless, these results, and the results involving TNF-α signaling all suggest that the production of mitochondrial oxidants can be regulated and that the release of these oxidants may in turn directly regulate a number of critical intracellular signaling pathways.

5 ROS in Cellular Senescence

If oxidants can contribute to normal growth factor signaling when produced by cytosolic oxidases such as the Nox family of enzymes, and if mitochondrial oxidant can function in an analogous manner during hypoxia or after TNF-α stimulation, what does this mean for the role of ROS in aging? One possibility is that the release of oxidants from the mitochondria secondary to aerobic respiration might be tightly regulated and that once released, ROS might have specific targets within the cell. Redox regulation of these targets would then be expected to influence the overall rate of aging. One particularly intriguing possibility is that gene products linked to life span (e.g., sirtuins, Foxo proteins, and target of rapamycin pathway) might impinge on this system particularly in regulating the release of ROS from the mitochondria.

What are the relevant pathways that mitochondrial oxidants regulate? One possibility is entry into cellular senescence. Senescence represents a permanent growth-arrested state that many, but certainly not all, investigators feel represents a cellular surrogate of overall aging. Initially, most investigators studied the phenomena of replicative senescence. As originally defined by Hayflick and colleagues, primary cells in culture will only divide a finite number of times before they enter a permanent growth-arrested state. This state is known as replicative senescence or
the Hayflick limit. At this point, the cells undergo morphological changes, including developing a flattened and elongated appearance. Later, it was realized that these cells also underwent a number of biochemical changes that could lead to their rapid identification. One such change is the appearance of β-galactosidase activity at a neutral pH [25]. This “β-gal” positivity has become a useful marker for both in vitro and in vivo senescence. More recently, the activation of certain pathways, including the DNA damage response and increased levels of p16 protein, have become additional strategies to identify senescent cells [26].

Although senescence was initially viewed as a phenomenon that occurred only with the passaging of primary cells in culture, the ability to more accurately identify the senescent cell made it possible to ask whether there were other triggers of senescence besides the number of previous cell divisions. It quickly became clear that the answer was “yes.” Indeed, a host of factors constituting both environmental and genetic stresses seem to trigger entry into senescence [27]. One of the most interesting for our discussion is the observation that moderate levels of exogenous hydrogen peroxide can induce senescence [28]. In these experiments it would seem that senescence is achieved at concentrations of hydrogen peroxide that are below what would normally induce apoptosis. Thus, a continuum of cellular responses could be envisioned after exposure to hydrogen peroxide, ranging from growth to senescence to apoptosis, depending presumably on the integration of the concentration and duration of ROS exposure (Fig. 16.4).

Another trigger for the induction of cellular senescence is the expression of certain oncogenes within the context of a primary cell. The first example of this was

![Fig. 16.4](image-url)  
**Fig. 16.4** Cell fate and ROS levels. Increased intracellular ROS levels have been linked to growth, death, and senescence. One plausible scenario to explain these various outcomes is that both the concentration and temporal characteristics of the ROS burst is important. Short increases might stimulate growth, whereas prolonged increases might trigger either senescence or apoptosis depending on the absolute levels
the expression of the Ras oncogene in primary fibroblasts derived from either mouse embryos or human skin biopsies [29]. Although expression of tumor oncogenes is generally associated with increased growth and subsequent cellular transformation, such experiments were generally performed in established, immortalized cell lines such as NIH3T3, cells that do not senesce. In contrast to these results, it would seem that expression of a number of oncogenes within normal cells triggers either apoptosis or senescence. This response might in fact have very important consequences for the host cell and for the entire organism. Indeed, for both cases, a cell committed to either cell death (apoptosis) or irreversible growth arrest via senescence cannot divide further and hence cannot pass on the harmful tumor oncogene to subsequent cells. As such, it is now widely held that the induction of cellular senescence by tumor oncogenes represents a fundamental and essential barrier to transformation and a widely used cellular method to block tumor formation [26].

What is the role of ROS in these processes? Early on, it was realized that ambient oxygen concentrations represented an important variable for replicative life span [30]. For example, the number of cellular divisions a primary cell could undergo before becoming senescent varied inversely to the concentration of ambient oxygen. It is common practice to grow cells in tissue culture in an environment that contains room air consisting of approximately 20% oxygen. Although obviously convenient, this concentration is probably 5-fold higher than most cells normally see within the body. Culturing cells in more physiological oxygen concentrations of 5% or even 10% oxygen significantly extends the replicative life span of cells. Conversely, growing cells in higher concentrations (e.g., 50% or greater) reduces their life span [30]. When these initial experiments were performed 30 years ago, the actual basis for replicative senescence was unknown. It is now generally held that replicative senescence is caused by the gradual shortening of telomeres with each cell division. When primary human cells telomeres reach a critical shorten length, a pathway is activated that triggers senescence [31]. The actual length of telomere shortening per each human cell division is approximately 100–200 base pairs, but this number is not fixed. When cells are exposed to higher oxygen concentrations (and hence presumably higher ROS levels), the shortening of telomeres occurs in larger chunks per division [32]. As such, these mechanistic observations provide a reasonable explanation as to why cells senesce at different rates depending on the ambient oxygen concentration.

Oxidants also might play a role in oncogene-induced senescence. For example, we were able to show that in primary human cells engineered to express the Ras oncogene, levels of mitochondrial ROS were increased [33]. These oxidants seemed to be derived from the mitochondria, although the exact reason why Ras expression led to higher levels of intracellular ROS remains obscure. Nonetheless, scavenging of the Ras-induced ROS was sufficient to inhibit the ability of Ras to induce senescence. Recently, several screens have been performed that look for genes whose increased or decreased expression allow for the escape from Ras-induced senescence [34–36]. In many of these cases, the gene products whose altered expression can allow for continuous cell proliferation in the presence of Ras overexpression seems to be involved in either overall metabolism, redox signaling, or both. This has led
to the supposition that ROS are important mediators of cellular senescence and that oxidant-mediated modulation of critical redox-dependent pathways are required for entry into senescence [37].

6 ROS and Stem Cells

If oxidants participate in cellular senescence, is this important for organismal aging? Indeed, considerable controversy exists regarding the role, if any, for senescence in overall aging. Although some view the appearance of senescence solely as an in vitro tissue culture phenomenon, others believe that the collection of senescent cells is fundamental to the degenerative changes associated with aging [38]. Thus, the exact contribution of cellular senescence to overall aging remains intensely studied albeit intensely controversial.

The accumulation of senescent cells may have different effects depending on what type of cell is involved. For example, a skin cell that is senescent may be cosmetically important, but perhaps not critical to an organism’s overall survival. In contrast, senescence in a postmitotic cardiac myocyte or neuronal cell may have a more important functional consequence, because these cells cannot be easily replaced. The senescence of stem and progenitor cells represents another example of where cellular senescence might have widespread consequences to the organism. Like the heart and brain, stem cells are present at birth and persist throughout the entire life span of the organism. The mobilization of stem and progenitor cells is essential for normal homeostasis and tissue repair, processes whose fidelity declines with age. Clearly, the exhaustion or senescence of the stem and progenitor pool would be expected to have dramatic effects on an organism and perhaps mimic many of the deficiencies associated with advanced age [39].

What then regulates stem and progenitor cell aging? Interestingly, some recent evidence suggests that levels of intracellular ROS might be critical. In a relatively recent manuscript, a group of investigators were probing the phenotype of mice lacking the ataxia-telangiectasia mutated (Atm) gene. These mice exhibit many but not all of the symptoms seen in patients suffering from ataxia-telangiectasia. Like humans with this condition, the mice are cancer prone and many mice develop a lymphoma in the first few months of life. Nonetheless, some animals do not develop tumors and in this context it was observed that cancer-free Atm–/– mice at 6 months started to develop a picture of bone marrow failure [40]. It was quickly discerned that the hematopoietic stem cells (HSC) of the Atm–/– mice had undergone premature exhaustion. In an effort to understand how the absence of Atm led to HSC failure, the authors explored a previously observed phenotype of Atm–/– tissues, namely, that Atm–/– cells demonstrate constitutively high levels of ROS [41]. Consistent with these past observations, the HSC of Atm–/– mice also had higher levels of ROS. More importantly, the premature exhaustion of HSC in this case was rescued by simple antioxidant treatment. This phenomenon is not unique to Atm. Indeed, another very recent study explored the biology of the Foxo family
of forkhead transcription factors. Triple-deficient animals lacking FoxO1, FoxO3, and FoxO4 also developed rapid exhaustion of their HSC. These investigators also implicated an ROS-dependent mechanism [42]. Thus, it would seem that stem and progenitor cells might be particularly sensitive to changes in intracellular oxidants. Further studies are needed to understand whether the rise in ROS within the stem cell compartment is leading to exhaustion through the induction of senescence, apoptosis, or both.

7 Summary

The evidence that ROS might contribute to aging is widespread and persuasive. Nonetheless, whether ROS correlate or cause aging remains an open question. Here, we have addressed yet another unresolved issue regarding oxidants and aging, namely, how do ROS influence the rate we age? Although the prejudice has been that oxidants cause random and nonspecific damage that accumulates over time, we have raised an alternative explanation. Namely, we suggest that oxidants may function as intracellular messengers within cells and thereby regulate a number of critical pathways and fate decisions within cells. Under this scenario, the production and release of oxidants from any number of sources, including cytosolic oxidases (e.g., Nox family members) or mitochondrial respiration would be tightly regulated. The release of these oxidants would in turn have specific effects within cells with the discrete redox activation or inactivation of specific target proteins. The result would be that multiple aspects of cellular activity operate under the broad umbrella of redox-dependent regulation. In this context, the challenge would be to understand how the previous evidence for a role of oxidants in aging can be reconciled with this new information. Further understanding regarding what regulates oxidant production, and a more complete delineation of the range of redox targets, hopefully will allow us to better address this question. Until then, we are left with two related and fundamental question. Do ROS make us age? And if so, how?

References

Summary and Outlook

Satomi Miwa, Florian L. Muller, and Kenneth B. Beckman

50 years have passed since Harman first proposed the free radical theory. Many investigators, using different approaches and model systems, have attempted to test it. Is the theory correct? Few investigators would conclude that the most ambitious form of the hypothesis—that oxidative stress is the major determinant of life span—has withstood scrutiny. At the same time, there is enough utility in the free radical theory as a framework for experimentation that it has kept the interest of successive generations of researchers. Even when rephrased in more modest terms, i.e. “Oxidative stress contributes to the aging phenotype,” the apparent validity of the theory depends on the model organism in question.

Thus, the goal of the first part of this book was to present an assessment of the free radical theory by experts in different model systems. As we have seen, the evidence that oxidative stress contributes to senescence or limits life span is strong in some model organisms, but weak in others.

1 Does Oxidative Stress Limit Life Span?

Passos and von Zglinicki (Chapter 3) make a strong case that mitochondrial reactive oxygen species (ROS) contribute to the senescent phenotype of primary human cells in culture, while Rovira and Finkel (Chapter 16) also point out that oxygen-dependent damage is a key driver of cell senescence itself. Osiewacz and Scheckhuber (Chapter 4) on the fungus *Podospora anserina*, highlight that senescence is largely the result of mitochondria-dependent degenerative processes and that oxidative stress may very well contribute to this phenomenon. Indeed, several genetic modifications affecting the mitochondrial electron transport chain dramatically lengthen the life span of that species. In *Saccharomyces cerevisiae*, Gonidakis and Longo (Chapter 5) conclude that oxidative stress limits chronological life span, which is consistently shortened by knocking out antioxidant enzymes (superoxide dismutase [SOD]), in an oxygen-dependent manner. Furthermore, there is evidence to indicate that reducing oxidative stress is both necessary and sufficient for extended life span. Chronological life span can be extended by pharmacological reduction of the rate of mitochondrial ROS production, or by overexpressing MnSOD. They note, however, that these extensions are
modest compared with what is achieved by manipulating nutrient signaling pathways. At the same time, the dramatic life span extension by these pathways is dependent on the presence of MnSOD, indicating that minimizing oxidative stress is necessary, if not sufficient, for life span extension.

Gems and Doonan (Chapter 6) present a solid argument that current data do not support the hypothesis that oxidative stress is limiting to life span in *Caenorhabditis elegans*, although they caution that this conclusion may be “private” to *C. elegans*, because its energy metabolism is unusual. A key observation incompatible with the idea that oxidative stress is life span limiting in *C. elegans* is that manipulating oxygen tension has very little effect on life span, even though this would alter the rates of superoxide production. *Caenorhabditis elegans* is highly unusual among higher metazoans in that it can live and reproduce normally in a 100% oxygen atmosphere; in mammals and *Drosophila*, such a treatment results in high oxidative stress and rapid death. *Caenorhabditis elegans* also seems unusual in that inhibiting the mitochondrial respiratory chain lengthens, rather than shortens, life span.

Mockett et al. (Chapter 7) review a large body of work testing the free radical theory in *Drosophila*. Their overall conclusion is that present data support the idea that oxidative stress contributes to aging in *Drosophila*, but not solidly so. The intervention leading to the greatest life span prolongation to date is the overexpression of glutamate-cysteine ligase (which has increased levels of the antioxidant glutathione), although other antioxidant enzyme overexpression studies have yielded mixed results. It is worth remembering that glutathione is not only an antioxidant but also a critical player in protein folding and detoxification, performing roles that are related but distinct from its antioxidant function. We note that, contrary to *C. elegans*, there is an almost linear decrease in life span with increased oxygen tension in *Drosophila*.

Because of cost and time constraints, much less work has been done on evaluating the free radical theory in mammals. Muller (Chapter 8) reviews the evidence from life span studies of antioxidant knockout mice and concludes that, although subject to some interpretation, the present data are not incompatible with the hypothesis that oxidative stress is limiting to life span.

Thus, there is neither unambiguous support nor refutation of the free radical theory. Why is there such variability between model systems in terms of the degree to which the free radical theory seems predictive? There is no simple relationship to explain this diversity, such as higher versus lower organisms. Consider the example of *Drosophila* and *C. elegans*, both on the protostome evolutionary branch, more closely related to one another than to mammals or yeast. Why does the free radical theory seemingly hold true in *Drosophila*, whereas it comes close to being demonstrably false in *C. elegans*? Although we can give no simple and firm answer, we would echo the sentiment of Gems and Doonan (Chapter 6), that *C. elegans* is unusual for a metazoan in its apparent minimal dependence on the mitochondrial respiratory chain for energy metabolism. Conversely, *Drosophila* is strongly dependent on mitochondrial energy metabolism and uses a tracheal respiratory system that allows rapid and large amounts of oxygen delivery, but at the price of the cells being directly exposed to atmospheric oxygen: this means cells are exposed continuously to 21% O₂, compared with 3% for
a typical mammalian cell. Regarding how these results will ultimately translate to humans, results on antioxidant ablation and acute oxygen toxicity in mice would suggest that mammals, in general, behave more like *Drosophila* than *C. elegans*.

A completely different test for the free radical theory was explored in the review by López-Torres and Barja (Chapter 9). Comparisons of vertebrate species with different life spans indicate that species with longer life spans consistently show less oxidative stress than shorter-lived species. This correlation is seemingly not due to differences in antioxidant enzyme levels, but in ROS production by the mitochondrial electron transport chain. It is noteworthy that although many studies have manipulated antioxidant levels, the effect of altering mitochondrial ROS production on life span in mice has not been determined.

## 2 Role of Oxidative Stress in Pathology

The second part of this book documents the extraordinary explosion of interest in oxidative stress as a agent of pathology. This rapid progress in the field has been possible due to the development of animal (mouse) models of disease, and the fact that interventions and the follow-up to test the role of oxidative stress in pathology do not take as long as those in a direct study of aging.

Experts in various age-related pathologies have provided detailed assessments of the contribution of oxidative stress on development and consequences of the pathologic conditions.

Stuart and Page (Chapter 12) reviewed mouse models deficient in oxidative DNA damage repair, concluding that oxidative stress is a potent driver of DNA mutagenesis and carcinogenesis. Didion et al. (Chapter 13) reviewed the literature on the role of oxidative stress in hypertension, concluding that there is solid evidence implicating oxidative stress in both mice and humans. In mouse models, ablation of selected antioxidant enzymes results in an aggravation of experimentally induced hypertension. Conversely, overexpression of selected antioxidant enzymes or ablation of the superoxide producing vascular NAD(P)H oxidase can attenuate experimentally induced hypertension.

Ballinger (Chapter 10) evaluates the role of oxidative stress in cardiovascular diseases. He presents a paradigm of disease linked to mitochondrial dysfunction. This is supported by extensive correlative evidence in humans and by a key study showing that deficiency of MnSOD dramatically aggravates pathology in a mouse model of atherosclerosis.

Brookes and Hoffman (Chapter 14) discuss the involvement of mitochondrial function in cardiac ischemia reperfusion injury, with detailed accounts of the molecular mechanisms centered on cardiac mitochondria, specifically ROS production. They take a further step in examining how age-related changes in mitochondria (and other related cardioprotective signaling pathways) can affect the pathology. Although direct evidence is lacking, as the authors suggest, this model provides opportunity to examine a potential link between oxidative stress, aging, and
pathology (susceptibility to ischemia-reperfusion injury). Although not emphasized in their chapter, ischemia-reperfusion injury can be modulated by antioxidant enzyme modulation.

In diabetes, Abdul-Ghani and DeFronzo (Chapter 11) review in vivo and in vitro cellular studies showing correlations between ROS and vascular complications in diabetes, β-cell failure, and insulin resistance. Moreover, hyperglycemia is linked with overproduction of mitochondrial ROS. However, they raise several issues in relating these studies to human type 2 diabetes, including the lack of consistent effects of antioxidant therapy on diabetic vascular complications.

To conclude, although increasing antioxidant enzyme activities does not typically have positive effects on life span in several model systems, various lines of evidence suggest the beneficial effect of antioxidant treatments against pathologic conditions in mouse models of human age-related disease. But, what evidence do we have that oxidative stress contributes to these pathologies in humans? Despite an abundance of supporting correlative epidemiologic data from observational studies, as noted by Serafini (Chapter 15), major preventive clinical trials of dietary antioxidants in cardiovascular disease and cancer have largely failed, although methodologic constraints might explain null results. Alternatively, it is also possible that oxidative stress is more of a bystander than an active player in the etiology of these diseases.

Remembering that ROS can play a physiologic signaling role (Chapter 16), and that evolution has permitted ROS to be produced constantly with imperfect antioxidant systems, any attempt to test oxidative stress involvement by reducing ROS levels, may have unforeseen consequences.

3 Epilogue

Overall, on its 50th birthday, the status of free radical theory would best be described by the Scottish legal verdict “not proven.” The major failure of the theory is that to date, pharmacologic and genetic increases in antioxidant activities have not consistently and dramatically increased life span. At the same time, increasing ROS levels (typically by ablation of antioxidant enzymes) generally results in shortened life span, as the theory predicts. It is possible that oxidative stress is but one of many factors limiting life span, and that in and of itself, reducing oxidative stress is a necessary component but not sufficient for life span extension. Our understanding of the antioxidant system remains incomplete, with new antioxidant genes still being discovered. Thus, we, and many other researchers take the position that although not conclusive, the evidence is sufficiently encouraging to warrant further investigative effort.

In completing one discovery we never fail to get an imperfect knowledge of others of which we could have no idea before, so that we cannot solve one doubt without creating several new ones.

Joseph Priestley, 1785.
Index

A
N-Acetyl glucoseamine, 203
Acute hypertension, 230
Adenine nucleotide translocase, 24, 117, 170, 174, 177, 258
Advanced glycated end product (AGE), 203
Aging, 6, 53, 54, 56, 61, 68, 69–70, 71, 73, 81, 82, 84, 86, 92, 95, 96, 99, 100, 103–104, 113–114, 120, 131, 151, 153, 166, 258–259, 261, 293, 301, 304–305, 311
ATP levels in, 101
cytochrome c oxidase (complex IV) and, 260
determination of, 5
definitions and theories of, 7
free radical theory of, 4, 8, 14, 57, 111, 253, 263
oxidative stress theory of, 8, 118, 124
rate of, 150, 155
rate-of-living theory, 5, 152
Alpha-Tocopherol, Beta Carotene Cancer Prevention (ATBC), 272
Alternative oxidase, 59
Angiotensin-converting enzyme (ACE), 231
Angiotensin II
in CuZnSOD transgenic mice, 238–239
in generation of ROS in hypertension, 231
MnSOD protection, 239
in Nox2-deficient mice, 234
phosphorylation and translocation of p47^{phox}, 236
p22^{phox} overexpression in smooth muscle, 235
pressor response to, 233, 236, 238, 241
Angiotensin receptor blockers, 231, 233
ANT. See Adenine nucleotide translocase
Antioxidant (s), 13, 99, 104, 112, 119, 124, 300–301. See also Catalase, Glutathione, Glutathione peroxidase, Peroxiredoxin, Superoxide dismutase
caloric-restricted animals, levels in, 154–155
and cytokines, expression of, 172
defenses, 113
diabetic vascular complications and age-related disease, 312
down-regulation of expression of, 113
enzymatic overexpression, 121–122
enzymes and, 25, 41, 69, 84, 91, 200, 309–311
gene expression changes in oxidative stress, 138
phenotypes, 139
glutathione peroxidase-1 knockout, 135–136
in vivo activity of, 278
kidney and brain, treatment of, 231
levels of, 284, 311
lifespan parameters in, 140
network of, 14, 269–285
dietary modulation, 278–281
and oxidative damage repair knockout mice, 129–130, 132, 140, 310
system
bilirubin, biliverdin reductase and ApoD, 17
H_{2}O_{2} production, peroxiredoxins role in, 15–16
therapy of, 205
and total antioxidant capacity (TAC), 269
up-regulation of, 136
AOX. See Alternative oxidase
APE. See AP endonuclease
Index

AP endonuclease, 220
ApoD. See Apolipoprotein D
Apolipoprotein D, 17
Ataxia-telangiectasia mutated (Atm) gene, 304
Atherosclerosis, 166, 169, 258, 271, 293, 311
Atherosclerotic lesion, formation of, 166–168

B
Base excision repair, 217
and cancer, 219–221
Bcl-2 protein, 73
BER. See Base excision repair
Bert effect, 4
Bilirubin, 17
Biliverdin, 17
Birds, aging rate of, 152

C
Caenorhabditis briggsae, 94
Caenorhabditis elegans, 49, 54, 75, 81–104, 310
superoxide and aging in, 96
Ca2+ homeostasis, 259
Caloric restriction (CR), 45, 75, 118, 149–150, 154, 158.
See also Dietary restriction
Carbonyl cyanide p-trifluoromethoxy-phenylhydrazone, 41, 44, 49, 203
Cardiac ischemia, 253–268, 311
Cardiolipin (CL), 258, 260
Cardiomyocyte, 254, 258–259
Cardiovascular disease (CVD), 165–180, 270–271
development of, 177–180
epidemiology, 165
mechanisms of pathogenesis, 168–169
mitochondria in development of damage and function, 173–175
mitochondrial DNA, 169–170
oxidant production and regulation of, 172–173
oxidative phosphorylation of, 170–171
risk factors and mitochondrial damage, 175–177
β-Carotene
lipid-soluble, 274–275
supplementation, 273
activity, Drosophila melanogaster, 119
adverse effects, 121
effect on vascular responses in CuZnSOD, transgenic mice, 239
mitochondrial, 118–119
overexpression of, 76
protection at cellular level, 274
CCS. See Copper chaperone of SOD
β Cell death, in T2DM, 198–200
 cellular mechanisms and ROS role in, 200–202
Cell death, oxidative damage role
DNA oxidative damage, 25
lipid peroxidation, 24–25
oxidative damage to proteins, 26
Cellular senescence, 39–50, 214, 301–305, 309
Chronic granulomatous disease (CGD), 295
Chronic hyperglycemia, in β cell death, 199–202
Coenzyme Q (CoQ), 98–99
Colony-forming units (CFU), 68
Comet assay, 281
Copper chaperone of SOD, 90
CuZnSOD (SOD1). See Superoxide dismutase (SOD)
CVD. See Cardiovascular disease
Cytochrome c oxidase (COX), 56, 58–59, 120–121, 152, 170, 177, 260–261

D
Daf 2, 75–76, 87, 91–94, 97, 101–103
DAG. See Diacylglycerol
Data Food Networking (DAFNE), 278
Deoxyribose phosphate lyase, 220
See also Type 2 diabetes
Diacylglycerol, 203
Dichlorfluorescein diacetate (DCFDA), 294
Dietary restriction (DR), 91, 101–102, 150.
See also Caloric restriction (CR)
Dinitrophenol, 49
DNA damage
age-dependent nuclear, 75
BER-catalyzed repair of, 220
carcinogenesis, 214–216
cellular transformation and tumorigenesis as outcomes, 214
Comet assay to assess, 281
levels of, 85, 87
oxidative, 22–23, 72
participation of oxygen in, 214
repair, 133
ROS-mediated, 216
DNP. See Dinitrophenol
*Drosophila melanogaster*, 15, 19, 54, 111–125, 156
dRP. See Deoxyribose phosphate lyase
Duox1-2 proteins, 233

E
EC-SOD (SOD3). See Superoxide dismutase (SOD)
Electron transport chain, 81, 84, 96, 259.  
See also mitochondrial electron transport chain
Endothelial Nitric oxide synthase (eNOS), 232, 258
Endothelium-derived relaxing factor, 230
Enzymatic antioxidants, 121–122
Epidermal growth factor (EGF), 297
Escherichia coli, 14, 23, 25, 69–70, 72–74, 86, 94, 98–99
ETC. See Electron transport chain

F
Fatty acid, oxidation of, 254
FCCP. See Carboxyl cyanide p-trifluoromethoxyphenylhydrazone
FEN1. See Flap endonuclease 1
Fenton chemistry, 13
Fenton/Haber-Weiss chemistry, 254
Ferric reducing ability of plasma (FRAP), 275
FFA. See Free fatty acids
Flap endonuclease 1, 221
Flavoprotein, 254
Fluo-Lip assay, 277
FRAP assay, 276
Free fatty acids, 193, 195–196, 199–200
Free radical leak, 152, 154–158
Free radical/oxidative stress hypothesis of aging, 130. See also Free radical theory
Free radicals, 4, 12, 14, 111, 229, 253, 272
Free radical-scavenging antioxidants, 274
Free radical theory development and derivatives of, 5–6
history of, 4–5
FRL. See Free radical leak

G
β-Galactosidase activity, 302
Galenic antioxidant, 271
antioxidant minerals and vitamins, 
SUVIMAX study for, 273
lung cancer, β-carotene and retinol efficacy trial (CARET trial), 272
meta-analysis studies of clinical trials, 273–274
role in CVD prevention, 271–272
GAPDH. See Glyceraldehyde phosphate dehydrogenase; Glyceraldehyde-3-phosphate dehydrogenase
GlcNAc. See N-Acetyl glucoseamine
Glucose-stimulated insulin secretion, 200–202
Glucotoxicity, in β cell death, 199
Glutathione, 15, 24, 94, 112–113, 122, 124, 132, 157, 172, 175, 197, 241, 255, 275, 297, 310
Glutathione peroxidase 1, knockout of, 135–136
Glutathione S-transferases, 90, 93
Glyceraldehyde phosphate dehydrogenase; Glyceraldehyde-3-phosphate dehydrogenase, 13, 204
G protein, 237
GPX. See Glutathione peroxidase
Green fluorescent protein (GFP), 91
Grisea gene, 58
GSIS. See Glucose-stimulated insulin secretion
GSTs. See Glutathione S-transferases
GTPase superfamily, of proteins, 295

H
Hayflick limit, 40
Heart, 153, 215, 253–263, 271, 273, 304
Heart Outcomes Prevention Evaluation (HOPE), 272
Hematopoietic stem cells (HSC), 304
Heparin sulfate, 230
HIF-1α. See Hypoxia inducible factor-1α
HIF-1α transcription factor, 300
High-performance liquid chromatography, 22
HNE. See 4-Hydroxy-2-nonenal
H₂O₂. See Hydrogen peroxide
Homeotherms, adaptive effects of, 114
HPLC. See High-performance liquid chromatography
hUCP2 expression, 119–120
Human aging and diseases, oxidative stress in, 8–9
Human MnSOD gene, C47T polymorphism, 239
Human p22phox gene, polymorphisms, 235

I
IKKβ. See Inhibitor of nuclear factor κB kinase β subunit
Indices of respiratory competence, 70 Inducible nitric-oxide synthase, 176 Inhibitor of nuclear factor κB kinase β subunit, 195 iNOS. See Inducible nitric-oxide synthase
Iron regulatory protein (IRP), 74 Ischemia-reperfusion (IR) injury, 135, 177, 256–258, 312 with aging, risk factors, 258–259 cardioprotective agents and PT pore inhibitors, 258 cytochrome c, release of, 258 cytosolic [Ca2+] and [Na+], elevation, 256 permeability transition (PT) pore, 256 response of cardiac mitochondria, during aging, 261 ROS generation, 256 Ischemic preconditioning (IPC), 262–263

J
JNK. See Jun NH2-terminal kinase
Jun NH2-terminal kinase, 195, 197, 201, 299–300

K
Knockout mice
CuZnSOD (SOD1), 18–19, 129, 132–135, 138–140, 215, 238–239
MsrA, 137 Ogg1, 23, 137–138, 140, 219, 223 peroxiredoxin, 16, 136–137

L
Life span, 41, 53–56, 61, 68–69, 75–76, 84, 86–87, 91, 95, 97–100, 103, 114, 116–120, 122, 124, 130, 132 antioxidant and oxidative damage repair knockout mice
CuZnSOD (SOD1) knockout, 132–133
EC-SOD (SOD3) knockout, 135 glutathione peroxidase-1 knockout, 135–136
MnSOD (SOD2) knockout, 133–135
Long-lived vertebrates aging rate of, 150 endogenous antioxidants level, 151–152 Lorain Smith effect, 4 Low-density lipoprotein (LDL), 85, 166, 168–169, 175
M
Malondialdehyde (MDA), 21, 24, 281
Maximum life span potentials, 149–157
MEFs. See Mouse embryonic fibroblasts
“Membrane pacemaker” hypothesis, 118
Metabolic potential
lifetimes energy expenditure, 115
relations with metabolic rate, 115–116
Metabolic rate, 101–103
and life spans, 6, 115
rate-of-living hypothesis and, 5–6, 101, 116
Metacaspases, 61
Metal-chelating antioxidants, 274
Methionine restriction, 150, 156–158
MetR. See Methionine restriction
mev-1, mutation of, 84
carbonylated proteins in, 85
cardiac, 253–254
catalase enzyme, 118–119
in C. elegans, 96
and CVD development, 169–175
damage and CVD risk factors, 175–177
diseases vulnerability, 177–180
DNA oxidative damage, 153–154
dynamics of, 60
dysfunction of, 42, 48–49, 260
free radical production
CR, mtROS and longevity, 154–155
DNA oxidative damage, 153–154
PR, methionine restriction and longevity, 156–158
ROS generation, 150–152
functional decline of, 134
GPx1 in, 241
H2O2 and, 136
IR injury and, 261
membrane potential, 101, 201
mitochondrial electron transport chain (ETC), 18–19, 49, 58, 70, 81, 95, 98, 120, 132, 232
mitochondrial reactive oxygen species (ROS), 150, 221–223, 254–256, 299–301, 309
production, 39, 154–155, 312
MnSOD in, 239
morphology of, 97
MsrA and, 137
oxidative phosphorylation of, 3, 82
respiration of, 68–69
respiratory chain of, 168
role in aging, 103–104
superoxide production of, 20
MLSPs. See Maximum life span potentials
MnSOD (SOD2). See Superoxide dismutase
Mouse/mice, 129–140, 214–215, 300, 303, 311–312
Mouse embryonic fibroblasts, 137, 214, 300
MTH. See Mut T homologue
See also Mouse/mice
Mut T homologue, 216–219
Mut Y homologue (MYH), 217–219
Myoglobin, 254
N
NAD(P)H oxidase, 18, 96, 196, 205, 215
231–233, 295–296
Nox isoforms, 233, 299
Nox1, 233–234
Nox2, 234–235
Nox4, 235
Nox proteins, 233
Nox subunit isoforms, 235
p22phox, 235–236
p47phox, 236
p67phox, 236
Rac1, 237
nDNA. See Nuclear DNA
Nei-like proteins (NEIL), 220
Neoplastic progression 3, 17–18
Neutrophils, 231
NFκB. See Nuclear factor-κB
NGT. See Normal glucose tolerant
Nicotinamide nucleotide
transhydrogenase, 94
Nitric oxide (NO), 229, 263, 294, 296
nitric oxide synthase, (NOS), 176, 232, 258, 310. See also iNOS, eNOS
Nitrosative stress, 112
NNT. See Nicotinamide nucleotide transhydrogenase
Nonenzymatic antioxidant, 121, 274–275
imbalance of, 281–284
Norepinephrine, 231
Normal glucose tolerance, 192
Npn3. See Neoplastic progression 3
Nuclear DNA, 72–73, 75–76, 138, 153, 170, 215, 219
Nuclear factor-κB, 172, 176, 299

O
OGG1. See Oxoguanine DNA glycosylase
ORAC assay, 277–278
Oxidant production
attenuation mechanisms
cytochrome c oxidase (COX) activity, 120–121
iron metabolism, 120
mitochondrial catalase activity, 118–119
uncoupling proteins (UCPs), expression of, 119–120
life span extension and, 118
Oxidative damage, measurement of, 20–21
DNA, 22–23
lipid peroxidation, 21–22
protein oxidation, 23–24
Oxidative molecular damage
from free radicals, 111
repair, 122
methionine sulfoxide reductase A (MSRA) for, 123
protein carboxyl methyltransferase (PCMT) expression, 123
small heat shock proteins, 123–124
Oxidative phosphorylation, 3, 82, 170, 174, 176–177
in aging and diseases, 8–9
atherosclerotic diseases, 271
Caenorhabditis elegans, 81–82, 84, 91, 94
cause of, 168
Drosophila melanogaster, 111
in endothelial cells, 176
hypertension, 229–242
hypothesis, 116–118, 120
mtROS production and, 157
in pathology, 311–312
ROS generation, 57–59
ROS scavenging, 59
in Saccharomyces cerevisiae, 67–69
oxidative damage, age dependent, 75–76
ROS and aging, 69–73
signature of, 139
and tumorigenesis, 272
type 2 diabetes mellitus, 191–196
role in insulin resistance, 196–198
Oxidative stress hypothesis. See Free radical/
oxidative stress hypothesis
of aging
factors associated with experimental tests of, 112–114
8-OxodG. See 8-Oxo-7,
8-dihydro-2′-deoxyguanosine
8-OxodGTP. See 8-Hydroxy-7,
8-deoxyguanine triphosphate
8-Oxo-7,8-dihydro-2′-deoxyguanosine, 153
and cancer, 216–219
OXPHOS. See Oxidative phosphorylation
concentration, 3, 70, 87, 118, 214, 299–301, 303
consumption, 6, 48, 95–96, 102, 114, 116–117, 122, 155, 172–173, 299
tension, 3, 19–20, 25–26, 310
P
p53 gene, 18, 139–140
PaDnm1 gene, 60–61
PCMT. See Protein carboxyl methyltransferase
Permeability transition (PT) pore, 256, 258, 261–262
Peroxiredoxins, 15–16, 136
knockout mice, 136–137
substrates for, 136
Peroxynitrite (ONOO−), 11, 23, 173, 197, 229, 232
PHD. See Prolyl-hydroxylase
Physiological adaptation
adaptive effects, 114–115
metabolic rate, 115
PI3-kinase (PI3-K), 296
PKB. See Protein kinase B
PKC. See Protein kinase C
Plasmid-like DNA (pLDNA), 56
Platelet-derived growth factor β receptor, 172
Platelet-derived growth factor (PDGF), 172, 294, 297
Index

Podospora anserina, 53–63, 309
Poikilotherms
  adaptive effects, 114
  life extension, 117
  longevity studies in aging, 116
Poly(ADP-ribose) polymerase, 232
Polyphenols, antioxidant potency, 275
Polyunsaturated fatty acids, 21
p16 Protein, 302
Prolyl hydroxylases (PHDs), 222, 300
Protein carboxyl methyltransferase, 123
Protein kinase B, 194
Protein kinase C, 195
Protein oxidation, 23–24
Protein restriction (PR), 156–158
Protein tyrosine phosphatases (PTPs), 196, 297–299
PUFA. See Polyunsaturated fatty acids

R
Ras oncogene, 68, 75, 219, 303
Rate-of-Living Hypothesis, 5–6, 101, 115
vs. oxidative stress hypotheses, 117–118
Reactive nitrogen species (RNS), 229
and aging, 69–73, 87–95
in cellular senescence, 301–304
chemistry of hydrogen peroxide and hydroxyl radical, 13
superoxide, 11–12
DNA oxidative damage, 25
in growth factor signaling, 293–294
heart mitochondrial generation of, 254–256
and insulin action
  β cell failure, 198–200
  cellular mechanisms of β cell failure, 200–202
  insulin resistance pathogenesis, oxidative stress in, 196–197
  oxidative stress-induced insulin resistance, mechanism of, 197–198
type 2 diabetes, etiology of, 202–205
  sources of, 18–20
  and stem cells, 304–305
Reactive species (RS), role of, 168–169
Repetitive life span of cells, 40–41, 67, 73, 76
Replicative senescence, 48–49
Respiratory chain, 152, 174, 254, 260
Retrograde response, 39–49, 59–60
  signaling, 42–29, 72, 74–76
Rieske iron sulfur protein (RISP), 260

S
Saccharomyces cerevisiae, 41, 67–68, 70, 80, 90, 309
Selenium supplementation, 273
Senescence, 39–50, 53–57, 137.
  See also Cellular senescence
SH2. See src-Homology 2
Small heat shock proteins, 123–124
Smooth muscle cells, 166–167
Sod1 gene, 14–15, 18–19, 25–26 69–72, 74
Sod3 gene, 14, 135, 240–241
Spontaneously hypertensive rats (SHR), 230
src-Homology 2, 194
Srxn1. See Sulfiredoxin
Subsarcolemmal mitochondria (SSM), 254, 256, 261
Sulfiredoxin, 17–18
EC-SOD (SOD3), 135, 240–241
MnSOD (SOD2), 19, 23, 59, 69, 72, 75, 90, 122, 133–135, 172, 174–177, 215, 232, 239, 284
role of, 59
chemistry of, 11–12
production of, 18–20
SOD and dismutation of, 14–15

T
T2DM. See Type 2 diabetes
TCA. See Tricarboxylic acid
TEAC assay, 276
Tetrahydrobiopterin, 232
Thiobarbituric acid-reactive substance assay, 21
Thioredoxin, 23–24, 122, 132, 136–137, 232, 255, 297
Tobacco smoke exposure and CVD development, 176–177
α-Tocopherol, 21, 94, 272, 274, 284
α-Tocopherolquinone (α-TQ), 94
Total antioxidant capacity (TAC), 269–270, 278–281
Total radical-trapping antioxidant parameter (TRAP), 275–276, 284
Tricarboxylic acid cycle, 42, 200
Trolox equivalent antioxidant capacity (TEAC), 275
Tumor necrosis factor-α (TNF-α), 172, 176, 299–301
in mitochondrial oxidants regulation, 301
signal transduction, 299
Type 2 diabetes, 191–205
epidemiology of, 191–192
pathophysiology of, 192–193
reactive oxygen species, role in
in β cell failure, 200–202
in diabetic complications, 203–205
and insulin resistance, 196–198
in microvascular complications, 202–203
production and aging rate, 153–154
Tyrosine nitration, of selective proteins, 232
Tyrosine peroxide, formation of, 12
Tyrosine phosphorylation, 294

U
Uncoupling protein (UCP), 48, 100, 119–120, 172–175, 203–204
human UCP 2 (hUCP2), 119–120
role in β cell function, 201–202
tissue-specific effect of, 120

V
Vascular cell adhesion molecule-1, 176
Vascular oxidative stress and hypertrophy, in hypertension, 231
Vascular smooth muscle cells (VSMCs), 294
VCAM-1. See Vascular cell adhesion molecule-1
VHL. See von Hippel-Lindau protein
Vitamin C, 196, 232, 271–275, 277, 281
in life span of Caenorhabditis elegans, 94–95
in lipid peroxidation, 21
von Hippel-Lindau protein, 223, 300

Y
Yeast, 14–16, 25, 26, 41–42, 49, 57, 61, 67, 136–137, 139, 155, 310. See also Saccharomyces cerevisiae

Z
Zinc-thiolate complex, of eNOS, 232